

## Guide to Raising the Evil Shark

Author : Black Nettle

Introduction :

Daily update, 12 noon

On the first day after becoming a cannon fodder and a fake daughter and leaving the wealthy family, Pei Lu accepted the system's commission to raise a villain for a high reward.

That day, a badly injured shark fell on her bedside. Its handsome face was twisted and distorted, and its blood stained her bed sheets. Its black scales were all ominous and sharp.

Pei Lu listened to his uneasy and strange mumbling in his dream, took out her phone and downloaded the Genius Baby APP for him to learn pinyin\_ (: 3)∠ )\_

She also took him to smell the flowers, hugged him when he cursed, and told him not to be afraid.

The system left in a hurry and came back in a hurry, trembling with fear and found that something went wrong when it was transmitted, and accidentally brought the most difficult ancestor in the prison here.

Pei Lu: " Ah? But he is very well behaved. "

system: " ? "

So she got more money than before, and a week after becoming a fake daughter, she became a wealthy woman with more money than before o\_O

Pei Lu's fish farming observation notes :

1. He is a must-have cheat for drawing cards, and he can be rescued easily from the sea.

The Pei family needs a young master who is eager to flatter them.

2. He is very well behaved and obedient, but a little shy, so you need to spend more time with him.

3. He is very smart and loves to study.

4. Their children grow out of the warmest seabed, so they don't need to get married or fall in love.

The man who watched her write remained dignified and gentle, his black pupils glowing with light and dark pools. He suppressed his desire to hide her on an uninhabited island and explained to her gently and patiently:

" We can also be in a relationship. I'm smart and love to study. "

Pei Lu's hand trembled and the pen fell to the ground.

QAQ .

? Content tags: fantasy space, wealthy family, system, sweet story

Search keywords: Main character: Pei Lu | Supporting character: . | Others:

One sentence introduction: Me and the Evil Shark

Concept: People should have dreams and always look to the sun

## Chapter 1

" The Pei family has raised you for twenty years and has never treated you unfairly. Unfortunately, we are not destined to be together. We have discussed it. The family does not lack this mouthful of food, but you should want to go back and see your biological parents, right? "

A familiar voice, a familiar cold tone. Pei Lu looked up. It was her mother Zhou Jieyu. She came from a prominent family and was a wealthy lady who lived a life of luxury. Her marriage to Pei Ruhai could be considered a match made in heaven.

The couple's relationship has been pretty good over the years. One of them manages the company outside, and the other is beautiful and involved in the wife's social life at home. The Pei family is considered a well-known family in Xing City.

But they rarely mentioned their daughter.

Pei Ruhai only has money in his eyes and he has no time to take care of his children. Zhou Jieyu wants to raise her daughter Pei Lu into a lady from a wealthy family, a socialite that everyone likes, but this disappointing daughter has had her own ideas since she was young. Her daughter was uniquely beautiful in the upper circles of Xingshi City. She was also graceful and could never make mistakes in any occasion, but this was all superficial.

Pei Lu doesn't like opera, piano or flower arranging. She just likes to lock herself in the room and read some meaningless novels and comics. She makes friends with all kinds of weird people. She resists her fiancé whom the couple carefully selected. She is rebellious, like a wild flower that has strayed into an exquisite garden.

What made her angry was that she actually opened some kind of studio outside without her knowing.

The Pei family has been wealthy for generations, and they have some kind of arrogance that is difficult to erase. At least in Zhou Jieyu's opinion, the entertainment industry is something of the lowest class. They, the Pei family, do not like to be exposed, and do not like to be associated with those dirty celebrity gossips, so Zhou Jieyu even secretly tripped them up.

Zhou Jieyu never understood why she gave birth to such a daughter, who didn't listen to her and had no good qualities except her looks.

It was not until now that she realized that this was not her biological child.

It turns out that everything was wrong from the day she was born twenty years ago.

Zhou Jieyu was also very upset. She had made sufficient preparations for her delivery, but no one expected that she would unexpectedly give birth prematurely during that trip.

How could that backward town compare to the place she had carefully chosen?

Things went wrong from that moment on, and this mistake lasted for more than twenty years.

Fortunately, her biological children were born well-behaved and much more sensible than the current child.

Pei Lu stood there, feeling herself being scraped by the knife again and again. The sharp knife carved into her skin, cutting off the connected flesh and blood, and leaving indelible marks on her bones.

Her mind had been in a daze since yesterday, and she had trouble accepting all this suddenness.

Her nerves were numb, but she understood the look in Zhou Jieyu's eyes. She said that the Pei family did not lack someone to eat.

But she was not a fool, she understood and knew that she could not stay here any longer. She hummed softly, and in front of the young girl standing next to Zhou Jieyu, she took off the pink gem necklace around her neck and the pair of diamond earrings with two eyes. Then she took off her new fashion jacket and pointed to the only set of shorts and T-shirt left, and the pair of shoes on her feet.

"I can't walk out of this door without clothes on. I'll just put the rest on the bill and pay it back later."

Zhou Jieyu was a little confused from the moment she took off the necklace. It was not until she started talking that she seemed to realize something and looked at the stubborn girl in front of her in surprise.

Pei Lu slowly retreated under the astonished gaze of Zhou Jieyu and Pei Mengmeng, the real daughter of the Pei family.

"You ... don't have to do this," Pei Mengmeng quickly spoke out to stop him, "This ... this will always be your home ... you can come back anytime."

Pei Lu looked at the strange yet familiar girl.

Pei Mengmeng looks very similar to Zhou Yujie, and just by standing there one can tell they are mother and daughter.

In fact, Zhou Yujie has maintained herself so well that it is not an exaggeration to say that they are sisters.

At this moment, the other party was looking at him anxiously: "There's no need to do that ... I also promised mom ... Aunt Zhao that I would go back often to visit you, so ..."

Pei Lu didn't know who the Aunt Zhao she was talking about was, but she felt that she should be her biological mother.

But Pei Lu shook her head gently, then turned and left.

"Don't bother her," Zhou Jieyu frowned and stopped Pei Mengmeng before she spoke again.

She was a little angry because of the other party's attitude. Although the two families with this ill-fated relationship both had the surname Pei, they were very different.

Zhou Jieyu originally thought that if Pei Lu gave in to her, she might keep the man, but now it seems that this stubborn daughter herself is not destined to be rich.

Pei Mengmeng lowered her head and pursed her lips, not daring to speak.

But her eyes couldn't stop drifting to the shining jewels on the sofa.

These .....

Everything will be hers from now on!

Pei Lu walked out of the house where she had lived for twenty years with an empty mind, and got into a taxi that passed by the door in the sultry evening.

She took out her cell phone and roughly calculated the money she had spent in the Pei family over the years in the car.

Well, eight figures.

Then she reset her computer to zero, logged out, and glanced at her bank card balance.

2088.91.

She left the card given by Pei Ruhai at the Pei family. This was the money she earned herself. The Pei family did not allow her to study things in the entertainment industry. Although Pei Ruhai liked money, he was conservative and old-fashioned.

In order to hide it from Zhou Jieyu, the studio's first pot of gold came from the money and bonuses she earned from her internship when she went abroad for exchange.

But she didn't expect that she couldn't hide it, and Zhou Jieyu still discovered her relationship with the studio, so that place ...

Anyway, this is all her belongings now.

The driver thought today's passenger was a bit strange. She came from a high-end residential villa area, but when she sat in the back and looked at her cell phone, her pretty face became long and she looked like a poor person with a lot of hatred and resentment.

What? Now even rich people have troubles that they can't solve?

The driver couldn't help but glance at the other person in the rearview mirror.

Another look.

Finally, he couldn't help asking, " Miss, where are you going? "

Pei Lu held back the tears that were about to burst out of her eyes, put away her phone and choked up, " Let's go to the Lordon Hotel. "

Driver: "... Okay. "

Look at this!!

This is still a rich man.

" You are too squeamish. As a person with eight-digit debts and only two thousand and eighty-eight ninety-one cents on his body, it is unreasonable to spend one thousand eight hundred and eighty-eight to pay for a luxury suite in a five-star hotel for one day, isn't it? "

When Pei Lu stepped on the elegant shag carpet, a cold mechanical voice suddenly rang in her head, ruthlessly reporting a series of numbers, revealing her scars.

" Leave me alone. "

Pei Lu, weak, pitiful and helpless, ran straight to the luxurious massage bathtub, took out her favorite tea-flavored essential oil as if she knew the way, and then dived into the hot water. The cold voice paused suspiciously for a second, and then began to bombard her fragile nerves with a series of cruel news.

" Do you think this is the end? No, this is just the beginning. Do you know what kind of family your biological parents are? They favor boys over girls and love to take advantage of you. They will grab you and suck all your blood. "

Pei Lu buried herself in the hot water in her bathrobe.

" The senior you had an affair with will leave you, you will be forced to go on a blind date with a rich old man, you will hear some very unpleasant things, and your career will suffer a very serious blow! "

Pei Lu hugged her knees tightly, her long, soft black hair spread out in the water. Drops of fragrant essential oil seeped into the tangled black silk, melting a teardrop.

" You will have no family and friends left. You are just a tragic control group for the real daughter Pei Mengmeng. In the end, you will die alone and miserably in this world. "

Pei Lu finally raised her head. Although she shed a tear, the corners of her charming eyes were not red at all, and she unexpectedly had a unique sharpness.

She finally began to wonder where this hallucination came from.

Is she finally going crazy?

" This is not an illusion. "

The system in her mind sensed her thoughts, sneered, and sent the scene that had not yet happened into her mind.

The cruel scene described by the cold mechanical voice just now flashed through her mind like a kaleidoscope. Pei Lu stayed in the water in a daze, allowing the system to bombard her inhumanely.

" impossible! "

She exclaimed in shock: " How could I be so useless! "

She has her own career, and although it was severely hit by Zhou Jieyu just as it was in its infancy, she has not yet fallen into despair.

She was thinking that she would rest in the hotel for one night and then cheer up to go to work tomorrow!

She really can't change some of her spoiled habits, but she will earn money to support herself in the future, so how can she be so miserable!

The system continued to attack her mercilessly: " You have too few chips in your hand, and you are just cannon fodder in this world. The real child of destiny is Pei Mengmeng. You only exist to set off her happiness, so that is your ending. "

Pei Lu was stunned, water drops sliding down her fair face, her tender red lips were slightly open, her peach blossom eyes were a little lifeless, her thin arms were still wrapped around her legs, and she curled up in the big bathtub, feeling insecure.

He looked like he had suffered a great blow and his life had collapsed.

After two full minutes, she finally opened her mouth and fought back at the system in disbelief: " Bullshit. "

Although she was still trying to be tough, the scenes were so vivid that she was actually a little shaken.

This strange sound doesn't seem to be an illusion.

" This is true, " the system repeated again, " You have too few chips in your hand, and you are destined to be cannon fodder, so this is your ending. "

" Who are you then? "

" I'm from the Space Administration. I specialize in finding those cannon fodders who meet the requirements but have suffered a tragic and unfair fate, and help them provide the chips to change their fate. "

Pei Lu remained in the same position, sitting there in shock.

The mist covered the large glass and the bathroom was filled with fog. She seemed to be isolated and came to another strange world. In that world, there was only a strange system.

" you ....."

She took a deep breath and asked, " What leverage can you give me? "

The system is simple and crude: " Money. "

Pei Lu blinked.

She is indeed short of money.

What she had experienced in the past two days was already extremely bloody and magical, so if it were a little more magical, it wouldn't seem like much of a big deal.

Sensing her thoughts, the system continued, " But our bounty is conditional. "

In the systematic narration, Pei Lu learned the concept of the Three Thousand Worlds, and learned about the brutal villains in some dangerous worlds that were beyond the knowledge of modern science.

These out-of-control characters threaten the survival of the world and cannot be eliminated due to their powerful strength, so the system headquarters has a transformation plan to teach these big demons some truth, goodness and beauty, so that they can put down their butcher knives and become Buddhas on the spot.

Pei Lu didn't understand, but was greatly shocked.

She didn't understand, but she felt that in order to make money, and quick money that did not exist in the criminal law, the system's ridiculous plan was worth a try.

So she asked, " How much are you paid? "

The system assumed that she accepted the plan and placed a contract in front of her.

" If everything is confirmed, you can sign it. "

Pei Lu skipped over the relatively simple terms and read on, then her eyes were fixed on the string of " 0 " .

Deposit: 1000000RMB

Final payment: 5000000000RMB

" ! "

At that moment, the girl, who was filled with infinite melancholy and confusion in her heart, trembled and stared at the number. When she came to her senses, her body had already honestly signed her name.

" The contract has come into effect. The contract partners will come to you one after another. Please work hard to complete the task and get the reward as soon as possible! "

After she finished speaking, she vaguely felt that something in her brain seemed to have disappeared.

Immediately afterwards, a loud noise was heard outside.

Pei Lu was startled, and regardless of the fact that she was in the water and her bathrobe and body were wet, she quickly stood up and ran outside.

A handsome man with a bit of gorgeousness and seductiveness fell on the soft big bed. He was in some kind of nightmare, his narrow eyes were closed, his beautiful face was distorted, and his sculpted muscles had long been stained with bright red blood.

The line flows down smoothly, extending all the way to ...

tail,

Tail???

Pei Lu stepped back in shock.

A black evil shark was reflected in Earthquake's pupils.

His scarred black fish tail had lost its luster, and because of his tall body, it could only drag on the ground, leaving a pool of blood.

The fish tail that looked extremely explosive glowed with a chilling dead sharpness under the cold light, and the scales on it turned outward revealed wounds deep enough to see the bone. Even though he was not awake, even in a dream, he was still mumbling uneasily.

The pair of bloodless lips uttered words that she could not understand, and then the other party showed his sharp teeth and raised his hand, which was only left with eerie white bones, as if he was going to attack his enemy .

“ Tear ... ”

The pure white and fragile pillow was covered with red feathers.

Lu , who was soaking wet, stepped back again and slammed the bathroom door.

" What system is that? Are you still there? "

This costs extra money!!!

This is much more dangerous than the cannon fodder fake daughter scenario! It would be better to go back to the rich family and compete with them in wits and courage! !

QAQ .

## Chapter 2

Pei Lu was roaring wildly in her mind, but she didn't dare to shout out loud, because the person on the bed looked extremely uneasy. She was afraid that if she made a sound, the other person would open his eyes, then raise his bony hand and chop her up.

What is going on?!

Can you regret it now?!

She walked around the room several times, but the man became quieter and quieter, and his breathing became weaker and weaker. Pei Lu walked around weakly, pitifully and helplessly for a few minutes, then turned to look at him again.

When she saw this, she was stunned.

The man's pale hand bones disappeared, and the red flesh and blood tissue on them was healing at a speed visible to the naked eye, including the hideous wound on the fish tail.

Feeling the wetness of the ground, she looked down and saw that the dark red blood had spread to her feet without her noticing, staining the white carpet and her snow-white skin red. But the strange thing was that the black color flowed on the carpet, then slowly faded until it disappeared.

Her eyelashes trembled slightly, and when she heard the movement on the bed, she walked closer bravely.

The other person still had his eyes closed, the blood stains on his skin had not faded, and under the light, his long eyelashes seemed to have a faint blue color, which was indescribably beautiful.

She knew that using the word "beautiful" to describe a handsome guy might not be appropriate, but beautiful was the only word she could find, and it was the kind of beauty that did not have

any femininity. His otherworldly features made her sure that he was a showpiece creation when God created humans.

Perhaps her gaze was too noticeable, or perhaps the other person was very alert, the person on the bed moved his eyelids and then opened his eyes.

Those eyes were as dead and inorganic as those cold and sharp scales, and no light could be seen. But if you look closely, there seemed to be something surging in those dark pupils, but it was hidden very deeply, as if it came from the darkest place in the world.

The man looked around the unfamiliar environment, then looked at Pei Lu, without moving.

It seemed as if coming to this completely different world was just a trivial matter.

His eyes were fixed on the light above his head and he said nothing more.

Just now when he was mumbling in his dream, Pei Lu heard his voice, which was very nice.

However, it was mixed with a murderous aura that was almost tangible, causing one to feel a chill down one's spine for no reason. Countless hunting shadows were flying before one's eyes, and it seemed that if one listened to a few more sentences, one would be dragged into a horrible nightmare from which one could never wake up.

Pei Lu, the person involved, was really a little regretful. She was just stimulated by the images instilled in her by the system. She herself did not expect that the object of the task would look like this.

He is not even a human being. Communication is a big problem. To make such a cold and sinister creature learn the truth, goodness and beauty of the world is as difficult as the sun rising from the west tomorrow.

But the dog system slipped away too quickly, as if it was afraid that she would change her mind. She could only take one small step forward.

Looking down again, the large horrific bloodstains on the carpet and sheets had disappeared, leaving only scattered white feathers and a ripped-open pillow.

On the corpse on the pillow was a pair of hands. The hands looked like the finest jade, pale and fragile in color, but with sexy veins and powerful muscles. Pei Lu didn't know what was wrong with her. She just ...

Silently, she pulled the other pillow from under his arm and placed it on the sofa next to him.

Si Ting was finally attracted by her actions. He focused his eyes and slowly turned his gaze towards her.

Pei Lu: "..."

Pei Lu's brain suddenly twitched, and the greeting words she had just prepared were gone. She opened her mouth and said, " You'll have to pay for this. "

After saying this, she wished she could bite herself to death.

But the other party didn't seem to intend to argue with her about it. He just tried to sit up on the bed.

This suite was fully equipped, but there was only one big bed. From the moment the other party sat up, Pei Lu's mind started to work rapidly.

She now has an extra one million yuan in her card from the system, but she is much more sober now and thinks she should save as much money as possible, not to mention ...

She lowered her eyes to look at the man.



The other person doesn't even have legs, let alone changing rooms, it's a big problem to take him away.

Pei Lu's head began to ache again.

But the man at this moment seemed to have completely accepted this place. He looked around and then turned his gaze back to her.

He sat in a somewhat casual posture, just looking at the person in front of him. His long, powerful black tail moved and his eyes looked in one direction.

Pei Lu turned her head and followed him. It was the bathroom.

Do you want water?

But then she looked at the fish tail again.

She said, " Can you understand me? "

Si Ting looked at her.

She said, " Are you a monster? "

Si Ting looked at her.

She said, " Can you conjure up a pair of legs? "

In other people's stories, can't mermaids grow legs?

Si Ting still looked at her.

Half a minute later, Pei Lu turned around silently and ordered room service.

She should be thankful that she came to the best hotel here because of her impulsiveness, otherwise she would not be able to get a wheelchair for the fish.

The moment the waiter knocked on the door with a smile, Jiao, who had been dignified yet a little casual just now, suddenly tensed up and his eyes became fierce in an instant.

He stared in the direction of the gate, his eyes full of vigilance.

Pei Lu still had a feeling of unreality, and she didn't know if it was because she had seen the other party more ferociously. Although he was scary like this, she was not as scared as before. She glanced at the other person, gestured to him to keep quiet, and without caring whether he could understand or not, she walked over and opened the door.

When the girl's back disappeared from the door of the room, Si Ting's tense nerves relaxed again.

This world is too quiet. There is no whirlpool sound of the abyss, no screams and roars, no anger and roaring.

There is no fishy and salty sea water, no smelly blood, and no rotting corpses.

There was even a faint scent lingering on the tip of his nose. It was the scent left by the girl when she got close to him just now. It seemed to linger around him, giving him a very strange feeling.

Si Ting comes from the most terrifying trench, and he has a legion.

He and his legion had been betrayed and cursed, and were immortal, so they feared no war. So people say they are evil spirits from hell.

But now he is the only evil ghost left, and he was brought to this strange place by that group of strange people.

Was that girl talking to him just now?

He was fluent in many languages, but he couldn't understand her speech and could only make vague judgments based on her actions and expressions.

The place is dry and there is no water.

He could feel the direction of the water. He could have condensed the water molecules in the air and let them take him wherever he wanted to go, but he didn't do that.

He looked at his drooping fishtail, and the girl's two slender and straight long legs appeared in his mind.

That was a form he had never seen before.

There is no land in their world, so Fishtail can go anywhere.

He thought for a moment and looked at his fish tail.

The black scales gradually faded and turned into the same color as the pale skin on the upper body, and gradually changed from hard to soft.

The lines lengthen and grow, pulling out the shape of the muscles.

From the moment his physical body died and was cursed, he was no longer a real mermaid.

He didn't know what he was. His original tribe was in that form, so he maintained his original appearance.

He was not used to their legs being able to walk.

There were black scales on those long legs that could not be erased, clearly indicating that he did not belong here either, he was still that monster.

Si Ting was not used to this strange appearance. He still felt that the original fish tail made him more comfortable. Moreover, the feeling of being able to change shape was so mysterious that it seemed very difficult to sustain.

Si Ting lost interest.

Just as the black scales were growing again, there was a bang and something fell to the ground.

He turned his head and looked. He had a headache because he was concentrating so much that he didn't hear any noise outside.

Pei Lu opened her mouth and wanted to speak but no sound came out. The box in her hand fell to the ground and the contents were revealed. It was a set of men's clothes.

Si Ting looked down in the direction she was standing, then looked at the things on her body, and seemed to understand what they were.

Pei Lu still has a sense of unreality until now. That sense of unreality brings her dizziness, which slightly destroys some of her rationality, just like when a person thinks that he can do whatever he wants when he is in a dream.

This strange feeling made her feel less panicked and uncomfortable. Perhaps the shock brought to her by the pair of strong adult male's long legs was too strong. She didn't care how strange the change was and took three or two steps forward.

Only the black spots that looked like the scales of a wild animal told her that the fish tail was not an illusion.

So she asked carefully: " Can you ... walk? "

Seeing that the girl was staring at her legs, Si Ting saw a hint of surprise in her watery eyes that were full of shock.

Si Ting felt a little strange. He didn't quite understand why she was surprised.

But he only ever brought fear to others, and no one ever felt happy because of him.

The strange feeling of straining in his nerves softened, and he dismissed the thought.

For now, it seems that it is not impossible.

Pei Lu saw him staring at her with his narrow black eyes, and suddenly realized that they still had a language barrier problem to solve.

Pei Lu was overwhelmed. She felt that the mermaid in front of her was like a blank sheet of paper, just like a newborn human baby, who knew nothing.

She doesn't have any children at home and she has never taken care of a child. How should she communicate in this situation?

Pei Lu racked her brains and used both words and gestures, and finally made the other party understand what she meant.

Si Ting looked at the pair of legs that were still in a semi-degenerated state, then looked at the ground, or maybe he was looking at her legs.

He shook his head.

Pei Lu: "..."

Pei Lu walked out dejectedly and pushed the wheelchair outside in.

Si Ting didn't quite understand what this thing was.

The leather electric wheelchair looked very expensive. Pei Lu was still wondering whether she should spend money to buy it from the hotel before leaving.

She really didn't think so before, but now she feels that one million is too much to spend.

Just as she was racking her brains to think of how to tell the other party how to use this thing, her cell phone rang.

Pei Lu felt that it was outrageous. On the first day after becoming a fake daughter, she was worried about how to make a fish walk on the ground like a human.

But there is no way, she is not a rich woman now, and she can't keep the man in the hotel forever.

When she saw the name on the caller ID, her hands shook with fear and she quickly picked up the phone.

Before I could say a word, the voice from the other side came crashing down on me: "Stinky girl, why didn't you tell me about such a big thing? Get off here. What the hell is going on in your family?"

This is Pei Lu's best friend, Ye Ke.

The Ye family is completely opposite to the Pei family. Compared to the conservative way the Pei family teaches their children, the Ye family is quite bold. Pei Ruhai looks down on the behavior of the head of the Ye family. It is not an exaggeration to say that the two families are mortal enemies, but Pei Lu happens to be good friends with Ye Ke.

Ye Ke has reached the age of experience, and unlike Zhou Jieyu who has already arranged the future path for her child, the Ye family completely free-ranges him.

I have no money and no background. I can do whatever I want and whatever I love.

If you starve to death, go home and I will give you something to eat. If you are not starving to death, continue to hang out outside. If you can make something of yourself, you will be rewarded with shares in Ye's company.

Pei Lu glanced at the man who was still leaning against the bed, covered the microphone and said, " I have already left the Pei family, you ..."

Ye Ke was much more anxious than her: " I know you are not at Pei's house. You are such a bad girl that you always run to this hotel when something happens. Give me a card. I am at the elevator entrance. Let me go up! "

Pei Lu shuddered and looked at Si Ting again.

" Okay, wait. "

After saying that, she quickly hung up the phone.

She looked at the old man on the bed seriously and gestured to him to keep quiet again, " No matter what happens later, don't make a sound. "

Si Ting watched her lips opening and closing carefully, not knowing whether she understood or not.

But Pei Lu thought it was no problem because he couldn't speak at all!

She looked at Si Ting's legs that were in a semi-degenerated state again. Just in case, she pulled the quilt over and covered him with it.

Then she stretched out her finger and placed it against his thin lips.

Si Ting's body temperature is much lower than that of a normal human. Even in a hotel with the heating turned on full blast, his body temperature is still relatively cool.

Pei Lu's warm fingers touched his lips. Although they were far away from him, he still felt a warmth that was different from his own.

Si Ting watched her run away from the bedroom quickly, and cast his eyes towards the chair beside the bed. Curiosity flashed across his eyes, and then he sat up straight and reached out to the red button on the chair.

Pei Lu quickly ran outside to swipe the elevator and brought Ye Ke up from downstairs.

Ye Ke majored in film and television directing in college, so the two sisters originally wanted to open the studio to make dramas, but because Zhou Jieyu intervened, they were sued and lost all their money.

The already impoverished studio was on the verge of bankruptcy, and the little money they had was originally intended to buy scripts, but now they had no money left.

Ye Ke was very open-minded about this kind of thing. The reason Zhou Jieyu was able to take advantage of him was firstly because the other party had bad intentions, and secondly because they were not thorough enough.

Things like this are something you learn from every failure. If it wasn't just Zhou Jieyu, there must be someone else. They just need to be more careful next time.

Ye Ke went abroad to solve the problem. Pei Lu's family was watching her closely, so she couldn't just leave whenever she wanted like them, so Ye Ke had to go alone.

So Ye Ke never expected that after she was away for just a few days, everything would have changed when she came back.

As soon as she got out of the airport, she saw the second generation discussing the important events of the Pei family in the past two days in the group chat. Her heart skipped a beat and the more she looked, the more she felt something was wrong. She came here as soon as she got out of the airport.

"What the hell is going on?" Ye Ke said anxiously, "Forget it ... go in and get me a glass of water first, I'm so thirsty ..."

As she said that, she sat down on the soft sofa. Pei Lu poured her some water while looking into the suite guiltily, her ears perked up. Suddenly, she heard a "bang" inside. Her hand shook and half of the water in the cup spilled out.

But the room was big and the distance was far, or perhaps Ye Ke's attention was all on the phone, so she didn't even raise her head and probably didn't hear it.

Pei Lu placed the glass of water in front of Ye Ke with shaking paws, but Ye Ke couldn't help but scold: "A bunch of idiots, what nonsense are you talking about ..."

He was halfway through his words when he realized where he was. He shut up, exited the chat interface, threw his phone aside, picked up the water and took a big gulp.

"Who said what?" Pei Lu sat next to her.

"nothing."

"I know it even if you don't tell me," Pei Lu said with a smile, "Is it those people who said that about me?"

Ye Ke whispered: "You can still laugh."

Pei Lu had already gone through all the ups and downs just now, and now she could comfort Ye Ke.

"What are you going to do now? Come home with me."

"What's the point of going to your house? The New Year is coming soon. Can I go there and cause trouble?"

Ye Ke said unhappily: "Are you still arguing with me about this?"

"No ..." Pei Lu rested his head on her shoulder. This trick always worked. Ye Ke's tough tone suddenly softened.

"You can't stay in the hotel forever, how much money do you have?"

When she said this, Pei Lu remembered: "Have you seen that person?"

Their studio lost all its money, so the script they had originally been optimistic about was naturally out of the question.

Ye Ke and she took a fancy to a medium-length mystery novel. The author of the novel was a Chinese, but he lived abroad for many years, so she went abroad.

"I saw it, but there's no hope." Ye Ke sighed softly.

The other party was very arrogant and asked for an exorbitant amount of money from her.

Ye Ke is also a young lady, and her temper has never been very good. She was originally very angry and wanted to come back to complain to Pei Lu, but Pei Lu is in a more difficult situation than her, so she doesn't want to say anything.

Pei Lu could guess from her expression that Ye Ke was being bullied, so she gently hugged her shoulders and said, " It's okay, I have some money here, you can use it, don't worry about him, he doesn't want to, we still don't like it! "

" I've thought about it, Xiao Ke, this isn't a good idea, let's use my notebook ..."

Ye Ke was shocked, but immediately waved his hand: " No, that's your hard work. Didn't we agree to hire an actor to act in it when we have money? "

" That was just a joke. If we continue like this, let alone becoming the best actor, we will all be so miserable that we have to go see God. "

Pei Lu likes to read novels. After reading too many, she feels like writing her own. She has her own small account where she specializes in writing short stories. She has quite a few fans. Since she has no contract, the copyright belongs to her.

Ye Ke felt that she was very talented. If Zhou Jieyu hadn't asked her to learn dancing and playing the piano every day, she might have become a writer.

But Ye Ke said, " I don't have money. Yours is a fairy hero, with both a demon king and a fairy. The costumes and special effects are free! "

This issue has been discussed before. Pei Lu's writing is indeed good, but it is still a waste of money to shoot that kind of drama.

" I can rewrite it with a modern background, so that we can save effort when filming. "

Pei Lu's most popular novel tells such a story :

The female supporting character in a fantasy novel suddenly wakes up and realizes that she is just the white moonlight in a book. She has been entangled with several powerful men for half her life, but those men treated her like a piece of trash. In the end, she died tragically to save the people.

But when she died, those people began to miss her, and she lived forever in those men's hearts.

So she, who didn't want to die, suddenly became a tiger, changed her usual gentle demeanor, and started to do the opposite. As a result, those men started to like her.

Then they started the Shura Field.

This is not a new topic. There are many novel websites nowadays that have novels about the female supporting role as Bai Yueguang, but this topic is a blank in the film and television industry, so there is still a lot of room for operation.

Pei Lu said: " I've thought about it. Actually, we don't need to go for TV series right from the start. TV series take a long time to shoot, and the production cycle is also long. We also have to review and find a video platform that can broadcast it.

Don't you think short videos are also good? Our studio has its own account, and we can post them however we want. "

As long as there is traffic and popularity, there will be money. It should be much easier to set a more ambitious goal at that time.

As soon as she finished speaking, Ye Ke turned to look at her in shock. Half a minute later, he managed to utter, " Actually, I thought so too, but I was afraid you would object ..."

Pei Lu: "..."

The two people spoke and shut up at the same time while looking at each other.

Just when Pei Lu wanted to humbly ask the other party to talk about his ideas first, the sound of a heavy object falling into the water was heard in the room.

Ye Ke's open mouth suddenly froze, and he hesitantly looked away, looking at the tightly closed door.

She also caught the flash of guilt on her best sister's face.

" Is there anyone else in this room? "

Pei Lu always comes here alone.

Pei Lu took a deep breath and tried to force a smile to get away with it, but Ye Ke had already stood up .

" Let me see who's in there. Why didn't they come out to say hello? "

Pei Lu took a deep breath in fear and tried to stop her, but it was too late. Ye Ke opened the door with a " whoosh " .

The bright room was exposed in front of her eyes. Outside the window was the deep night. The big bed was empty, but the quilt was messy, and it was obvious that someone had slept in it.

Ye Ke turned his head suspiciously and looked towards the lighted bathroom.

" Is it a man? "

Pei Lu: "..."

No, that's not human at all.

" My goodness, " Ye Ke rushed to the bathroom in shock, " Where did this man come from? Did you pay him to do that? You had such a big incident, I thought you locked yourself in the hotel and cried secretly, but it turns out you ..."

Her little sister was kicked out of the Pei family and was no longer a young lady. But on the first night she was kicked out, she actually ...

" Don't! "

Pei Lu held Erkang's weak hand.

" brush-- "

Ye Ke opened the bathroom door.

## Chapter 4

The moment he saw that face, Ye Ke took a deep breath.

The other person just leaned against the edge of the bathtub, half of his body submerged in the milky white water, his perfectly sculpted upper body exposed to the air. His two slender and strong arms were casually resting on the edge of the bathtub, his long black hair had been wet, and strands of it stuck to his shoulders and chest.

The other person's strong lines and edges were not at all feminine, but there was only one word left in Ye Ke's mind – beautiful.

Usually when describing a man, people would say " handsome " , but ... he was just beautiful, the kind of beauty that blurred the boundaries between genders, reminding her of the medieval grand duke she saw in the gallery the day before yesterday.

She seemed to have her entire soul captured by those eyes as deep as the sea.

Who is Ye Ke? She has been a wild and crazy person since she was young. When she was admitted to university, she suddenly had the idea of experiencing the fashion circle. She also worked as an editorial assistant in a foreign magazine . Because of her family relationship, she was highly valued and had the most work. The editor took her with him wherever he went. It is precisely because of this that she has seen all the big and small superstars and models from the entertainment industry to the fashion industry, whether they were at a banquet with toasts flying around, at a glittering awards ceremony, or even just their normal appearance without makeup.

She is the kind of person who has seen countless beauties.

Ye Ke thought that she would never see such a beauty that could amaze her again in her life. But the unfathomable temperament and beautiful face of the person in front of them seemed to be separated from them by a dimensional wall.

It doesn't look real.

Pei Lu slammed the bathroom door shut with shaking paws .

Ye Ke's hands that were holding the door handle were shaking. She looked at Pei Lu and took a deep breath: " You ..."

Pei Lu was using all his life's knowledge to search for reasons.

" Don't you only like Chen Lang? " Ye Ke didn't know the identity of the beauty inside, so he only dared to say this in a low voice.

" You can't say that ..." Pei Lu's tone began to become uncertain.

Chen Lang was a classmate of hers. The Chinese Department of their Y University was very strong. Because there were more girls than boys, Chen Lang, as a boy with good looks and a nice personality, was very popular.

Pei Lu did have feelings for the other person, and it was like that until the winter break, but now that they've separated during the break and have less contact, it seems like that's it.

She accepted the other party's advances in the beginning because she heard Zhou Jieyu say that she would let her meet the Chen family's youngest son during the Chinese New Year this year. If nothing unexpected happened, the two of them could get engaged after graduation. Isn't this an arranged marriage? How could she agree to it? She felt that she had never had a free love relationship since she was a child, which was a big loss. Moreover, if she had a boyfriend, Zhou Jieyu would not be able to break them up. The Qing Dynasty would have fallen long ago.

Under such impulse, she began to interact frequently with the other party.

But after the holiday, Chen Lang rarely talked to her. He was very popular and busy. She often saw his photos with a group of men and women on his circle of friends, which made her feel a little resistant. What's more, she still had a mess here that had not been resolved.

The romantic thoughts of falling in love are long gone.

Ye Ke racked his brains but couldn't remember having seen this man before. He looked young, but he didn't look like a student. But even if he wasn't a student, with his face, he couldn't hide once he showed his face.

" Where on earth did he come from? "

" Well ... my brother who moved abroad when I was a kid ..."



" You have such a brother! " Ye Ke was surprised.

If there really was such a top-notch person, would she still keep it hidden?

Pei Lu continued to make up: " He lost contact. His family went bankrupt recently, so he came to me for help. He is shy, so he didn't come out just now ..."

Ye Ke: "..."

She didn't want to believe it, but such a ridiculous thing as taking the wrong child happened to her best friend, it seemed like ...

" You're in such a state yourself, why do you have the time to care about him ..." Ye Ke looked pained. Although the boy was good-looking, he was poor. Isn't this just adding insult to injury?

Pei Lu pushed her out and said, " I must help him. He's a nice guy. "

" Let the Pei family help him. "

" He and I are friends, but the Pei family is not familiar with him. "

" Tsk. " Ye Ke wanted to say something, but after thinking about it, he shut up.

Judging from the man's looks, if he can't make it in life, he can just enter the entertainment industry. If not, he can just become an internet celebrity. Just post a bathing photo like the one just now and it will definitely become a hot topic.

She asked about the details of Pei Lu's departure from the Pei family. When she found out that she had left the house with nothing, she pushed her big box in front of her and said, " Take it. I'll leave the box to you. Just pick out my ID. "

Pei Lu was so moved that she wanted to hug her and kiss her. Ye Ke patted her back with a bit of sadness, but still laughed: " Then how dare you say such arrogant words just now, and say that you have money? "

" We are really rich, " Pei Lu said. She was going to use the money in the studio, so Ye Ke would know it sooner or later . She lied and said, " I saved some private money before and secretly used it to invest in stocks. I still have one million left. I took it out this time. I have no talent for investing in stocks, and I don't dare to go big. From now on, we have to rely on our own abilities to make a living. "

" Don't worry! " Ye Ke waved her hand, " We can definitely become rich women. "

Pei Lu opened the box and saw a pile of clothes with tags still on. She squatted down and said, " You have no money left to buy so many clothes, right? "

" Don't worry, it's time to go home for the New Year anyway. " She squatted down and took out a gift box from the box, " I bought this for my dad. I'll take it back to please him. Once he's happy, he'll give me money. You should write the script quickly, and we'll make some money. "

Pei Lu was amused by her expression as if she was ready to go home and beg for food.

Ye Ke picked up a piece of clothing and tried it on her, " We have similar body shapes, you can wear it, and when you make money, treat me to delicious food and drinks. "

" What do you do? "

" I can just go back and blackmail my brother. He has money. "

Ye Ke was a straightforward person with a quick mind. He felt something was wrong after he said this, but there was no sign of anything unusual on Pei Lu's face.

In fact, at that moment, Pei Ruhai's face flashed through Pei Lu's mind.

She used to think Pei Ruhai was the kind of father with a cold temper, and that he actually kept all his feelings in his heart. But when she recalled Pei Ruhai's still cold expression last night, she realized that it wasn't just his temper that was cold, it was his heart that was cold.

She is now without a father or a mother.

Pei Lu collected her thoughts and found an unopened mobile phone in the box. Ye Ke was about to change the subject when he saw it and said, " This is a gift for you. Didn't you say you wanted a new model? We don't have it in China. It also comes with a pair of headphones. "

Pei Lu squatted in front of the box, hugging her knees: " Are you trying to follow my example and leave the house with nothing? "

Ye Ke was happy: " If I don't take care of you, who will? "

The two of them have been friends since kindergarten. Although Zhou Jieyu doesn't want them to be friends, and Ye Ke is a crazy girl in Zhou Jieyu's eyes, Pei Lu has a good relationship with her. After so many years of friendship, what does a little material thing matter?

When she was in her senior year of high school, she had a high fever and her family members were all out of the country. It was Pei Lu who stayed up for several nights to take care of her.

Ye Ke's mind was filled with Pei Lu's good points, but Pei Lu's mind was filled with an unbearable picture.

The images that the system instilled into her mind did not disappear with it. The revolving screen of it was too fast for her to digest, but just now, she remembered some things about Ye Ke in her mind.

Later, Ye Ke seemed to fall in love with a man, but the man approached her with a premeditated plan. She was straightforward, bold and passionate, and once she fell in love, she plunged into it without any regard for anything else. She could not see through the man's tricks, and finally she let a wolf into the house, causing great losses to her family.

Pei Lu felt depressed. He covered his chest and kept the matter in mind.

It was time for Ye Ke to go home. Before she left, she asked again: " So you'll be staying in the hotel all the time? "

" I ... " Pei Lu's eyes widened, " I might go back to Yong'an Town. "

" Yong'an Town? "

" Well, my ... biological parents' home ... "

Ye Ke's expression suddenly became worried again: " How about I go back with you? "

" What are you going to do if you go back? " Pei Lu shook her head. " I can do it by myself ... I'll take him with me, " she pointed in the direction of the bathroom. " It's enough for him to be a bodyguard. Nothing will happen. "

Ye Ke finally felt relieved. Thinking about it this way, Pei Lu's kindness was right. It was always good to have a companion. That man didn't look like someone who was easy to bully.

" Then I'm really leaving. Call me if you have any trouble. "

Pei Lu sent Ye Ke downstairs and stood there, looking at the white layer on the ground. She didn't know when it started snowing. Snowflakes fell from the sky and landed on her hair. There were almost no people on the road. Cars were coming and going, and festive red could be seen everywhere. The New Year was coming, and everyone was rushing home.

Pei Lu was melancholy for only a minute before she remembered that there was a big trouble in the bathtub.

Her melancholy immediately disappeared and she went upstairs holding the card.

She didn't say it, but she was very glad that there was someone who could accompany her like this at this time.

The other person's calmness, without any sign of indifference towards anything, suddenly gave her some courage.

They are the same people now.

There is at least one person in this world who is in a similar situation as her.

He needs himself in this world.

She ran back upstairs. The snow outside made her face a little red. She gasped for breath and pushed open the bedroom door. Then she screamed " Ah " and quickly slammed the door shut.

Si Ting, who was lying on the ground, turned around and glanced at the closed door.

He didn't like the water very much; it had a bad smell, so he came out.

While he was sitting in the bathtub, he saw people walking downstairs through the large single-layer glass.

He immediately realized that if he wanted to stay here for a long time, he must get used to walking on his legs.

Otherwise he is an outlier.

Just like him to the mermaids after being cursed.

He knew the price he would pay if he didn't fit in.

So he just tried to stand and walk, with some difficulty, but he could do it.

He quickly appreciated the benefits.

Although I still like the feeling of staying in the water, this is all I can do for now.

The conversation of the two girls disappeared, as if they had gone out. Si Ting tried to walk out of the bathroom, holding on to the wall, and his foot happened to step on the clothes box that Pei Lu had thrown on the ground at the beginning.

Si Ting saw the clothes and a model poster sticking out of the box, so he bent down and picked them up from the blanket.

He also took out a small box from inside. The tall man printed on the outside of the box also had his upper body naked , wearing only a boxer jacket.

Si Ting opened the box hesitantly.

Just then, there was a noise outside again, and the little girl who looked like a rose screamed in fright and went out again.

Si Ting felt that she was a little too noisy.

Pei Lu was still gasping for breath. She had been running just now, but now she was scared.

In fact, this kind of suite that separates the bedroom and the outer hall is really rare. She just likes this style. Ye Ke even laughed at her, but she thinks this layout is very similar to an ordinary home.

Pei Lu wanted to loudly refute Ye Ke right now. This hobby of hers was very useful!

LS who loved looking at handsome guys , that was always limited to theoretical knowledge. When the real critical hit came, she was still dizzy and lost her composure. She stood at the door for an unknown amount of time before finally calming down. She looked at the door again and was hesitating whether to knock when the door was opened from the inside.

## Chapter 5

She took a step back, and then a handsome man appeared in front of her. The most ordinary black casual sweatshirt supported his strong and tall frame, making him look like a model who was about to participate in a fashion event. Pei Lu lowered her head and looked at his feet on the ground, then raised her head and looked at his long black hair. Suddenly, she no longer felt like worrying about how to go home and face her biological parents.

The hotel was bustling at night. When a handsome guy in slippers and sweatshirt and a girl in a down jacket appeared in the lobby, they attracted the attention of people around them. Pei Lu also knew that it was snowing outside, and it would be strange to take people out like this, but she had no choice.

This Mr. Yu has to go out sooner or later. It's icy and snowy, so he can't go out barefoot. The person next to me walked a little slowly, perhaps he was still not used to walking. Walking out of the hotel lobby, cold wind blew over, and goose-feather snowflakes fell on people's heads and faces. Si Ting looked down at the road under his feet, and suddenly felt a warm touch on his left hand.

The strange touch made him extremely uncomfortable. He lowered his head, looked at the finger that was holding his left hand, and then looked at its owner.

" I'm afraid you'll fall. This way it's more stable . "

Pei Lu didn't think much about it. The snowy ground was slippery, and the guy wasn't used to walking. If such a handsome guy fell on his back in the snow, wouldn't that be a huge disgrace? Si Ting watched her lips opening and closing, and quickly turned his eyes away.

Pei Lu touched the other person's hand and felt that it was too cold. It was the same in the hotel before. The other person was like an ice cube that could not be melted.

The down jacket she was wearing was the one Ye Ke had just bought, and she hadn't even had time to remove the tag. Down jackets are warm to wear, so she must buy him a thick coat. The nearest shopping mall is just across the street from the hotel, and it's warm again when you walk into the mall.

Pei Lu took him into a store. The salesperson inside's eyes lit up when she saw Si Ting. Si Ting was pushed in front of a mirror by the girl, and then a few sets of clothes were stuffed into his mouth.

Pei Lu herself doesn't like shopping very much. She only has a few brands that she often goes to, and she goes shopping directly when she needs something. When she is in the mood, she will check out some official websites and shop directly online, so she doesn't know many men's clothing brands.

But some big-name ready-to-wear brands make both men's and women's clothing, and in many cases you can't go wrong with the more expensive ones.

Even though I still have a lot of places where I need money, I got this one million because of him after all. It's okay to spend some money to buy him some nice clothes. It's pleasing to the eye.

Si Ting looked at the new clothes with resistance. His somewhat cold eyes frightened the enthusiastic shopping guide. Pei Lu patted his back and said, " Go and try them on. It's almost the New Year. How can you not have new clothes? "

Si Ting stared at her until Pei Lu was almost frightened.

Si Ting tried on a suit and a fashionable outfit. Pei Lu bought him a pair of leather shoes to match the suit and a pair of Martin boots to match the casual outfit. When they passed by a sports store, she bought him another pair of sneakers, which just matched his current casual outfit.

When she stood next to Si Ting and pointed out the row of down jackets to him, he just took a look and picked a black one.

When passing by a lingerie store, she ran in to buy some warm underwear. When she came out, Si Ting had already let go of her hand, and both of her hands were full of bags.

Pei Lu also bought herself a pair of beautiful leather boots.

Even though she knew she was different from before, she still couldn't control her spending. She looked at the balance, sighed silently , and vowed to make good money.

In fact, Si Ting was not being led around, this place was very much like the market of the mermaids, with all kinds of people coming in and out. He could observe a lot of things here, such as the architectural style, the culture, and people's smiles and every move.

As he looked, he felt that although the world looked different, people were ultimately filled with greed, anger, ignorance, love, hate, and desire.

Here, all you need to do to spend money is bring something like a small cube, which is a very useful tool.

Then he looked at the girl again.

She is very generous.

Si Ting knew that the system must have made some promises to her, but she didn't necessarily have to spend it on herself. The other party must have done so voluntarily.

There are too few kind-hearted people in this world, and he believes that this world is the same. He now came to a strange environment like a blank sheet of paper, which reminded him of the days when he was just a lowly slave of the mermaid tribe.

At that time, in order to survive, they were covered in wounds every day. Their arms were tied with chains and they could not break free. When they were hungry, they could only eat some rotten fish and shrimp that rotted in the cracks of the prison food. No one treated their wounds, and the wounds festered. Many people could only wait to die like that.

Until now, Si Ting could not tell whether he was lucky or unlucky. Among the thousands of slaves who entered the arena, he was the only one who survived.

This was an unprecedented event in the arena, so he was noticed by the Mermaid King, promoted to his side, and his status soared.

Until later on, he could only live in the dark trench, surrounded by killing . From this perspective, dying early was a relief.

but .....

He looked around and then at the person walking in front of him.

I also felt that if I had died at that time, I might not have met this rose-like girl.

Pei Lu saw his gaze stopped at the hair salon on the first floor, and she looked up at his long hair.

His long hair was not smooth and straight, but slightly curly, and it was scattered on his shoulders with a sense of nobility and elegance. She thought for a moment and asked, " Do you want to cut your hair? "

She made a pair of scissors with her hand and cut her long hair.

Si Ting understood and thought about it seriously.

Half an hour later, Pei Lu stood behind the man and took a deep breath, just like when Ye Ke first saw him.

The other person's hair looked somewhat soft after being cut short, and the half-long black hair hung down in front of his forehead, adding a bit of humility to his sharp eyebrows.

The barber seemed to have rarely seen such a good-looking person. When they left, he stuffed a morse into Pei Lu's hand and demonstrated it to her a few times.

" Spray it on, grab it like this, your boyfriend is so good, he looks good no matter what. "

Pei Lu held the bottle of Moss and looked at Si Ting standing at the door, her face a little red.

She wanted to explain, but felt there was no need, so she turned around and left the barber shop with the man.

The snow outside had stopped and Pei Lu was already starving. She looked at the man in front of her and ordered two beef rolls. She could eat them directly by tearing open the paper packaging without using chopsticks or fork.

Pei Lu felt that she was a caring little angel.

The waiter brought the meal, and Pei Lu pulled Si Ting to sit at a small table in the outer hall.

She pushed a beef roll and a seafood soup to him, and then asked him to imitate her and tear open the outer paper packaging in circles and bite open the thin but chewy crust.

The tender and juicy beef and the salty milky cheese satisfied her empty stomach. After taking a sip of the seafood soup, Pei Lu felt that she was finally alive.

Si Ting was eating quietly opposite her, neither fast nor slow.

After finishing their dinner, Pei Lu sat next to Si Ting and took out the new mobile phone that Ye Ke gave her.

Si Ting looked down at the furry little head next to her, then looked at what she was holding. It looked similar to what she had taken out when she paid outside just now.

Pei Lu wanted to apply for a mobile phone card for the other party, but she suddenly remembered that the other party had no ID. After walking around outside, she saw the small ID card on the bed. She guessed that it must have been left by the system and she herself had never noticed it.

WiFi in the hotel .

Pei Lu didn't care whether the other party could understand or not, and directly said: " This will be your mobile phone from now on. People nowadays can't live without it wherever they go. You have to learn how to use it too. "

Si Ting was attracted by the screen that was turned on. When Pei Lu was speaking, he subconsciously looked at her lips. He roughly understood what she meant. She wanted to give him that thing and teach him how to use it.

He watched the other person turn on the computer, and his slender white fingers tapped around on it, downloading something he couldn't understand.

She said this is called a " genius baby " .

She clicked on the app, registered a user name with her mobile phone number, and then received a newbie gift package.

When it came time to " select the baby's age " , I looked up at the other person in hesitation and chose " kindergarten " . I found the lessons on number recognition and pinyin among the rows of colorful nursery rhymes and animations.

She opened the pinyin alphabet and handed the phone to Si Ting.

Si Ting looked at her while holding the phone, and always felt that there was something malicious in her smile.

But he still pressed the red character on it as he was told.

A standard female voice came from the receiver – " a " .

Pei Lu looked at the tall man in front of her sitting there reading out pinyin, and finally couldn't help laughing out loud.

She covered her mouth and her shoulders shook .

Si Ting narrowed his eyes slightly and looked at her, then pressed on the red character again.

" a "

" a , o , e "

Pei Lu laughed and fell on the other person's arms.

Si Ting: "..."

Just as she was laughing and saying her stomach ached, the cell phone beside her started buzzing.

She got up and saw that it was an unfamiliar number.

She hesitated and hung up the phone.

But then, the number started flashing again.

Pei Lu frowned, suppressed her smile, hesitated for a moment, and finally answered the phone.

The voice on the other end was that of a strange woman, who cried out in a harsh voice: " Are you Lulu? I am your mother! "

That voice was not Zhou Jieyu's.

## Chapter 6

It was because the voice was not the familiar Zhou Jieyu that Pei Lu was stunned for a moment.

" Who are you ....."

This was her subconscious reaction, but there was a voice in her heart reminding her something.

After hearing her words, the woman on the other end of the phone cried even harder: " I am your mother, my child, you ... you are my child ... where are you now, mom and dad miss you very much ..."

The woman over there was still suppressing her crying, which sounded heartbreaking and sad. Pei Lu bit her lips tightly, and no matter how sadly the woman opposite her cried, she didn't say a word.

In fact, she was somewhat moved, but after all, she had never seen that woman before, and they were basically strangers.

Because of the cold relationship between the Pei couple, Pei Lu actually has always been indifferent to family affection. She has built a solid wall of her heart for herself. Perhaps because she has precious friendships and true hobbies accompanying her along the way, she does not feel lonely.

No loneliness, no desire.

So even though she believed what the system said, it was still hard for her to believe that that would be her situation.

You see, this woman was just crying pitifully on the phone, but even Zhou Jieyu, who was usually cold, drove over without caring about anything after learning that Pei Mengmeng was her biological daughter.

So even if she was the original her, how could she believe such a despicable lie?

Is it true, as the system said, that she is destined to be cannon fodder?

But why? She did nothing wrong.

The woman on the other side was still crying and saying something, but when she saw that the girl on the other side was still silent, her crying gradually became quieter, and she asked tentatively: " Lulu ... are you still listening? "

When the woman opposite called out her name, Pei Lu suddenly felt uncomfortable all over. Just when her hand, which was holding the phone so tightly that it turned white, a girl's voice next to her suddenly rang, breaking the gradually solidifying air.

" a , o , e "

" i , u , u "

Pei Lu: "..."

Pei Lu loosened her clenched hands and turned to look at the man next to her. The warm light in the room made his pale face look a little more rosy. He sat there, pressing the phone with dignified and elegant movements, like a nobleman who was appreciating a precious work of art. But the woman's expressive and emotional reading of Chinese pinyin told her clearly that it was not the case at all.

Pei Lu was interrupted by such a voice, and all the complicated emotions that had just emerged disappeared, and her mind became calmer.

The person on the other side was trying hard to prepare something touching, and when he suddenly heard such a voice, he fell into suspicious silence.

This is not quite what they thought.

Pei Lu calmed down and finally spoke: " Are you Ms. Zhao? "



She already knew the names of the couple from Pei Mengmeng. Even though she knew that the other party was her biological mother, she still couldn't call her mom right now.

" I ... " The woman seemed a little unbelievable, but it seemed that someone next to her whispered something to her.

After all, it was on the phone, the volume was too low and she couldn't hear it.

But the woman continued: " I am ... a child, you ... "

" I know, " Pei Lu lowered her eyes, her lively peach blossom eyes had lost their former laziness and the occasional flash of brilliance hidden deep within.

Si Ting turned his head to look at her and saw that her eyes were drooping and her eye circles seemed a little red. She looked very sad, but she didn't cry.

Si Ting frowned, and for some reason, he suddenly wanted to make her cry.

Because he felt that the other person looked even sadder than if she was crying.

" You ... go home for the New Year ... "

Pei Lu's calm attitude made the couple opposite lose their composure. In the end, Zhao Yazhen could only utter this sentence.

" Well, send me the address and I'll be back in a few days. "

Zhao Yazhen was unhappy when she heard this: " Why does it have to be two days later? "

They are still waiting for Pei Lu to come back for help.

Pei Feng recently found out about a job, which is to be a manager in a factory in the development zone. He will be a small leader, and the job is easy and the pay is good.

All the gifts that were supposed to be given were given, but at the last minute that friend told me that someone else was also eyeing this fat guy.

To be on the safe side, the friend asked them to go to the Wang family, as the factory belonged to them.

So Pei Feng found a middleman and planned to introduce his daughter to the son of that family, Wang Kun, for a blind date. Pei Mengmeng was a famous beauty in their area.

If this thing can be accomplished, Pei Feng will no longer have to be an idle lazy man.

Things were at this juncture. They had finally persuaded Pei Mengmeng to meet the son of the Wang family, but in the end, this happened again.

Pei Feng and Zhao Yazhen were shocked and anxious. After all, they had raised their daughter for so many years, and it would be a lie to say they were willing to give her up. However, it had been so long since the incident, and there was no way to trace what had been done wrong. The other party was also an important figure, so they dared not to offend him.

Pei Mengmeng can't come back, but the remaining family of three still needs to eat.

Fortunately, Mengmeng was sensible. After she left, she remembered this matter and sent Pei Lu's photo to the couple. When Pei Feng saw the appearance of his own daughter, he still felt that this matter was possible.

Even though he was biased towards Pei Mengmeng in his heart, he had to admit that after all, she was a child raised by a wealthy family. Her temperament and appearance were like those of a celebrity, and ordinary people could not compare to her at all.

If Pei Feng was 90% sure about Pei Mengmeng before, then now with Pei Lu, he is 100% sure.

Although Wang Kun is a rich young man, no matter how rich he is, he has never found such a beautiful girlfriend.

Pei Lu could hear the other party's displeasure, but still said: " I haven't finished my work yet, so I have to wait for two more days. "

Zhao Yazhen subconsciously wanted to talk too much, but she remembered that the daughter on the other end of the phone was no longer Pei Mengmeng, and she was afraid that she would not come back, so she closed her mouth and just said with concern: " Then you must come back. "

Pei Lu hung up the phone.

She fell on the sofa as if all her strength had been drained away. Si Ting, who had been sitting quietly beside her, turned to look at her again.

He didn't understand what these people were saying, but he could see their expressions and the tone of their voices.

This couldn't be a pleasant conversation, she worried.

Pei Lu turned her head and glanced at Si Ting, admiring his handsome face from a close distance. Her mood couldn't help but improve. It was really pleasing to have a handsome guy next to her. Even if she did nothing, just looking at him could soothe her mood.

She fell there limply with her eyes blank. Suddenly, she touched something and handed it to Si Ting. It was a pair of Bluetooth headphones.

Si Ting may not necessarily use this thing, but she already has one. So just give it to her since Ye Ke sent it to her. He will learn how to use a mobile phone sooner or later.

So Pei Lu opened the small scissor-shaped thing on the phone in front of Si Ting and put a pair of earphones into his ears.

Si Ting's skin was still cool. Pei Lu thought that perhaps he was not a human being, so his body temperature was so low. She was not as surprised as she was at the beginning.

Her fingertips touched Si Ting's earlobe, and the warm touch made him feel a little itchy. He subconsciously reached out and grabbed her hand. The slightly cool big hand covered the back of her white and smooth hand. Pei Lu shuddered and subconsciously pulled her hand out.

In fact, Si Ting is very smart and he understands many languages.

Because after becoming a rootless and originless monster, he would always be summoned by people from other worlds.

Most of them are defeated kings, unwilling leaders, or the kind of crazy people who don't care about anything.

They sacrificed their souls to summon his legions, allowing him to burn worlds to ashes with the flames of war.

He possessed the souls of those people, which was equivalent to possessing everything they saw and thought in their lifetime. The rules of many words were the same, so while Pei Lu was on the phone, he had already understood a lot of things with the help of this small cell phone.

He also quickly figured out the purpose of the thing in his ear.

Pei Lu slumped on the sofa with blank eyes. Half an hour later, she slowly picked up her cell phone and started looking for something.

She had already received the address sent to her by Zhao Yazhen, and she began to look for a monthly rental apartment nearby. She would have to live there for at least the month of winter vacation.

She picked two most suitable places, then looked at the time. It was already midnight.

She yawned slightly, then turned to look at Si Ting who was still staring at his phone.

She stood up, moved closer to the man, and saw that the battery level in the upper right corner had turned red. She gently pulled the man's sleeve and said, "Aren't you tired? Go to bed first." After saying this, she hesitated again.

So many things happened today that she even forgot about sleeping. There was only one bedroom in this suite. Was one of them going to sleep on the sofa?

But she was obviously still a novice and didn't know enough about the preferences of a mermaid.

Seeing that she stood up and looked tired, Si Ting stood up and opened the bedroom door.

Pei Lu: " ! "

Are all mermaids so open? !

Pei Lu followed slowly, poking her head out from behind the door with her claws, but she was a step too slow and didn't see anyone on the bed.

As if she had thought of something, she walked towards the bathroom again.

The man just dived into the water with his clothes on, his eyes tightly closed, and no one knew what he was doing.

She stood there for another minute, but the other party still didn't move. She was really sleepy, and figured that since the other party was a fish, he should like water more, so she closed the bathroom door again.

She thought she wouldn't be able to sleep tonight, but she was very tired, so as soon as she touched the pillow, she fell into a deep dream.

In her dream, that somewhat cold mechanical voice returned to her mind again.

" I'm here to pay a return visit. Is the host adapting well? "

In fact, the system is a little nervous. Si Ting is the most difficult villain in their headquarters, because before this, no one in an ordinary dimension could travel through time and space to other places to kill and burn people .

There was a very strange curse on him that none of them could figure out.

Si Ting was originally going to be sent to the laboratory for slice cutting, but he was too powerful and no one could contain him.

In fact, the injuries on the other person's body were caused by escaping from prison. At the critical moment when the other person was about to leave, someone turned on the transmission device and accidentally sent the person to Pei Lu.

In fact, the first person the system wanted to entrust to Pei Lu was not this kind of guy.

It was worried that this ordinary human in front of it would lose his life, which would be too pitiful.

The original transformation plan they had formulated would not have handed over such a difficult person to the client at the beginning, let alone a big trouble like Si Ting, but this time the situation was really urgent.

In fact, the system was here to take Si Ting back, but this time it coaxed the other party in a nice way, because it had already figured out the internal structure of their headquarters, and if it could run the first time, it could run the second time, so it had to let others go back voluntarily. He said that the girl had what he was looking for, but that was all in a hurry and he wanted the other party to take the client's life.

The unreliable system made me feel miserable. I racked my brains but couldn't think of where to start. After a long while, I could only ask: " Are you adapting well? "

In fact, if she had this powerful weapon , Pei Lu wouldn't need any financial support or their contract help at all.

Si Ting was cursed by the most evil thing, and the aura on his body can be judged as that of a big villain among big villains. With him around, the client's mere cannon fodder luck would have been scared away long ago.

And according to how clear-headed this girl is, she won't live such a bad life.

" He's adapted well. He's very well behaved. "

He is well behaved and quiet, and learns pinyin without making any noise. In short, he is a very worry-free task object.

The system was silent for a moment, and immediately checked its firewall to see if it had a virus. Who are you calling good???

The system was so shocked that it almost went garbled. Before it could finish scanning itself, the background defense system sounded a level one alarm.

In the bathroom, the man in the water opened his eyes. His black eyes opened in the water, and several long strings of characters faintly flashed in them.

" Alert! Source code is being leaked! "

" Alert! Source code is being leaked! "

" Alert! Source code is being leaked! "

system: " ....."

## Chapter 7

Because it was so shocked, the system didn't know whether to be afraid first or to repair its own code first.

Pei Lu was still waiting for the system to speak, but it just made a " buzzing " sound, as if a light bulb had short-circuited. She waited there for a long time, but there was no response from the system.

" What? "

She whispered, didn't he come to see her? She still had many things to ask.

The system over there had already gone crazy, let alone answering Pei Lu's questions. The entire system was trembling in its own electronic domain until a demon's face appeared in front of it.

An evil shark slowly revealed its body from under the darkness. The system's camouflaged little robot in the electronic domain shook out a string of data and almost cried.

Si Ting stared at the system quietly for a while, then extracted something from its data stream and looked at it carefully.

The system squatted there like a wronged young wife, not daring to speak, and could only look at the other party carefully.

He just took away the contract he signed with Pei Lu.

This person is still the same as always, with a perverted desire for control.

I know that the other party was rashly sent to a strange place, and I won't just ignore it.

The system, which has received emergency training in this area, calms down while the other party is silently reading the terms and waits for the other party to make conditions to it.

Although it promised the other party that he would find what he wanted here, it was not sure whether Si Ting would believe it.

But after a long time, the other party still said nothing.

He returned the contract to it, and the system cried, " Please come back with me ..."

Those who knew it were here to catch criminals thought it was here to invite the emperor back to the palace, while those who didn't thought it was here to invite the emperor back to the palace.

Si Ting stared at it for half a minute, and when he was about to exhaust the system, he disappeared into the silent electronic domain where only codes were flowing.

The meaning of resistance is very obvious.

It was left with only a confused look on its face.

The system cries in its own electronic domain.

I've known for a long time that this is a willful fish. Even when he was in prison at their headquarters, he was always very particular, demanding the best food, clothes, and the best room. He even had the final say on how to arrange the flowers outside the window.

They had dealt with people with bad tempers, and those who were stubborn and troublesome, but this was the first time they had encountered someone who had a cool and handsome face but was actually extremely fussy at heart.

Unfortunately, the opponent is very powerful, so they can't use force.

The system's task of picking up the person failed, so I could only go back crying and report, and postpone the time of sending the task object over.

Pei Lu slept very uneasily . She had a very long dream filled with the horrific details from her deep memories.

She returned to Pei Feng and Zhao Yazhen's home. She had an older brother named Pei Fan.

The Pei couple favored sons over daughters. Even when Pei Mengmeng was here, the couple favored their son more.

Of course, they were also nice to Pei Mengmeng, but Zhao Yazhen often said that their daughter was beautiful and must find a rich and good family in the future and get a good price, so that Pei Fan would not have to worry about the wedding house.

After Pei Mengmeng left, this " task " naturally fell on Pei Lu's head. She dreamed that she was deceived by Zhao Yazhen to go to a restaurant for dinner, and then a man who didn't look ugly but a little greasy came into the restaurant. His name was Wang Kun, and he looked at her as if he was looking at a commodity.

Zhao Yazhen and the woman who came with Wang Kun sat there for less than two minutes before leaving on the pretext of something. Wang Kun kept staring at her, which made her feel quite uncomfortable.

Later, the man tried to make a move on her and they had an argument. In desperation, she picked up the wine bottle on the table and smashed his head. The scene was in chaos. The Wang family called the police, who not only arrested her but also completely ruined Pei Feng's job.

She had completely formed a feud with the Pei family and the Wang family.

The Wang family called the police. The Pei family kept apologizing to them, but no one spoke for her. The cameras in the store were just for show, so she was taken to the police station and was not released until several days later.

That was the beginning of all the nightmares.

She had no backing and would not give in, so she kept banging her head against the wall until it was bleeding.

Ye Ke always said that she looked soft, good-tempered and easy to talk to, but in fact her temper was hotter than anyone else's, and it was both fierce and hard.

With her, there is never a middle ground, either you get it or you don't.

Pei Lu used to think Ye Ke was just joking, and she thought she was actually a very easy-going person. But in that dream that made her heart burn violently, she had no doubt that if a strange man treated her like that, she would really do that.

In fact, it was like this from the beginning. Sometimes people have to know how to bow their heads when they are under someone's roof. Didn't Zhou Jieyu give her a way out in the beginning? The other party said that she could stay in the Pei family.

In fact, if you think about it carefully, there is nothing wrong with it. If she really agrees, Zhou Jieyu will not kick her out.

Even if she was a little more vicious, she had all the advantages in the Pei family, and she would not necessarily lose all the love to Pei Mengmeng, who had just arrived.

Even if she took all those coats and jewelry away, Zhou Jieyu would not say anything, because the Pei family did not lack that little money.

But she just didn't want it.

Pei Lu seemed to be standing in a high place analyzing her own soul. She always said that Pei Ruhai was ruthless and Zhou Jieyu was cold and indifferent, but she was the same. She left the home where she had lived for more than 20 years without shedding a single tear.

She suddenly felt very strange.

But closing her eyes and thinking carefully about those nightmarish scenes, she re-examined Mr. Wang's face and felt that even if she knew the consequences, even if she knew that it was wrong to do so, she would still do it.

She was wrong, but she dared.

Her mistake was that she shouldn't have smashed the other person's brains in such a situation. She was clearly at a disadvantage, but the other party took advantage of her.

She was trapped in a violent atmosphere filled with mixed emotions, as if she had fallen into a whirlpool, which was pulling her body down and down, drowning her in a bottomless cold pool.

Just when she was about to suffocate in the cold dream, a melodious and peaceful song suddenly came to her ears. The song seemed to carry some power, like a pair of gentle hands, smoothing out her aching nerves bit by bit.

Along with the melodious music came a pleasant voice, which was deep and magnetic. Just two words sounded like a gentle song, carrying some kind of power that brought her away from the cold pond.

On a moonless and starless night, the room was enveloped in thick darkness. In the pitch-dark space, a man sat on a black wheelchair, with the dim screen of his cell phone shining down from below, making his three-dimensional facial features look a little eerie.

On the lit phone, the page of the " Genius Baby " APP was open, and a lullaby for the baby was playing softly.

Si Ting placed his slender right index finger on the girl's frowning brows. In this unsettling night, he slightly opened his thin lips and uttered two words awkwardly and slowly –

" Go to sleep. "

Only when you wake up can you open your eyes and face tomorrow's life.

The soothing music, like a vine, entangles the long night, and the flowers of dawn bloom on the tips of the tender and beautiful leaves.

When the early sun rose from the light blue sky, the white snow on the ground sparkled in the sun. Pei Lu felt that she had a good sleep. When she woke up, she couldn't help but stretch out in the quilt like a cat.

Her long feathery eyelashes trembled slightly, and all the things weighing on her heart suddenly became very present. She finally opened her eyes, and when she opened them, her vision was clear.

She turned her head slightly, climbed out of bed with her hair messy from sleep, and opened the curtains outside.

The outside was covered in snow, and the white snow set off the red spring couplets, giving off an indescribable auspicious atmosphere.

There were people coming and going on the road, everyone in groups of three or five, and I didn't know where they were all going.

Pei Lu leaned on the windowsill and looked for a while, then slapped her head and opened the bathroom door.

The man was standing in front of the mirror, holding a disposable scraper in his hand. He was looking at the thing. Although there was no extra expression on his face, Pei Lu could see a bit of curiosity in it.

Although he was fully dressed, his hair was still wet, as if he had just come out of the bathtub.

She was in a good mood this morning, walked over and said with a smile: " That one is for shaving, you don't have one. "

Can fish grow beards?

Of course not.

As she spoke, she walked up to the man and looked up at his smooth chin.

It was only at this time that Pei Lu realized that this person was really tall.

She was about 1.7 meters tall. When she walked with Ye Ke in high heels, he looked very petite and could lean on her shoulder.

Senior Chen Lang said that he is 1.80 meters tall, so judging from this, he is at least 1.85 meters tall.

She reached out and took the razor from the other person, looked at his handsome face again, and said with a smile: " But, since you can conjure up a pair of legs, it wouldn't be strange if you really had a beard. "

The daring Pei Lu became interested. She rubbed a circle of bubbles on the man's chin and then demonstrated to him how to use the blade.

She had experience. In order to prepare a gift for Pei Ruhai, she had researched for a long time and even caught a junior fellow student in the club with whom she had a good relationship to be a guinea pig. She even accidentally scratched a small cut on the other person's face, and the incident ended with her treating him to a cup of milk tea.

But she remembered that Pei Ruhai was on a business trip that night and had not returned since. The things had been left at home for half a month before she sent them away. She didn't know whether he used them or not.

Si Ting lowered his head, and was lifted up again by the other party. He looked at the other party's serious eyes through the mirror. It turned out that the brighter and brighter sunlight shone through the transparent glass, illuminating the girl's eyes as bright as glass.

Pei Lu seemed to have discovered some kind of fun. She rummaged around and took out the Moss that Teacher Tony had given her yesterday. She pressed Si Ting to sit on the bed and blew his hair dry.

She really thought that the man was very obedient. He would do whatever she asked him to do without resisting or saying anything.

Well, he can't talk yet ...

After all, you are going out, so of course you have to look good.

She blow-dried the other person's hair, sprayed mousse on the shiny black hair, and scratched it with both hands a few times.

The slightly messy black hair added a touch of unruly to the man's delicate features. His eyes were still calm, but they matched the aura created by his appearance.

Pei Lu suddenly felt relieved. At least this time she was not going back to that cannibalistic home alone.

Si Ting put on the same outfit he wore yesterday: black pants, a white knight-style shirt, a black lapel long coat, and mid-calf Martin boots.

He looked like a sheathed knife, and the sight of him nonchalantly leaning against the door while carrying his luggage was a photo that could be used as a magazine cover without any retouching.

Pei Lu is afraid of the cold. She loves looks but she herself is afraid of the cold, so she still wrapped herself in a down jacket. However, she wore a black velvet miniskirt under the down jacket and a pair of warm white leather boots underneath, which were the pair she bought yesterday.

She put her hands in her pockets and ruthlessly handed a suitcase and a bag of luggage to the man next to her, shrinking herself so much that she wished her neck wouldn't be exposed.



The snow on the road was almost melting, but after a night of low temperatures it froze into ice. Pei Lu was horrified to find that the man had only been out for a night of strolling yesterday, so today his walking posture was much steadier and not as slow as yesterday.

After almost falling down once again, she silently grabbed the other person's arm.

Si Ting stared at her exposed white hand, then grabbed her hand in his own and put it into his coat pocket.

Pei Lu was stunned for a moment, and the tips of her ears turned a little red, but although the other person's hands were cold, they were not as cold as the weather outside.

After leaving the hotel, she held Si Ting's ID card and applied for a mobile phone card for him.

Then she went straight to the station, took him to buy two cups of millet and pumpkin porridge at the entrance of the high-speed railway station, and got on the train directly.

A cup of millet porridge obviously could not satisfy her. Pei Lu excitedly searched for delicious food in Yong'an Town and prepared to take Si Ting to check in as soon as she got off the car.

Xing City is adjacent to the capital, and transportation is very convenient. It only takes twenty minutes to get from the city center to Yong'an Town by intercity train. After getting off the train and taking a taxi, it takes another twenty minutes to reach the destination.

Pei Lu excitedly got out of the taxi and pointed to the breakfast stand across the street to Si Ting. Regardless of whether he could understand her or not, she said happily: " Did you see that? It's just a breakfast stand, but it's very popular on the Internet. Everyone says it's delicious! "

As soon as she finished speaking, the finger she was pointing at froze.

Because she saw someone.

This person's face is exactly the same as the Wang Kun in the dream.

## Chapter 8

Si Ting was standing next to Pei Lu and watching her lips opening and closing, so he naturally did not miss the expression on her face.

He followed the other person's gaze and fixed his eyes on the man.

The man should be young, but his hair was a little thin. Si Ting saw his greasy face, slightly bulging belly, unsteady steps, and the big dog he was holding.

The big dog was completely black and had a ferocious aura. His keen sense of smell could even smell the fishy odor on the dog. The stale fishy smell made him guess that the dog must have eaten raw meat.

As soon as the big black dog appeared, it caused a small commotion around it. This ferocious dog, half a person's height, was tied with a chain, with its fangs exposed. It stuck out its tongue at the man and woman at a table, and its sharp eyes scared the girl so much that her face turned pale.

The man glanced at Wang Kun, who was buying breakfast, with dissatisfaction, but due to the other party's status, he did not dare to make harsh accusations.

The busy boss and his wife quickened their pace, just wanting to get this guy away quickly and not scare their guests.

Wang Kun is very famous in this area. His family is very rich and he likes to show off. He doesn't like to get up early and this place is far from his home . It was just a coincidence that he passed by here today while going out for business.

Wang Kun doesn't think highly of the things sold at a roadside stall, but the strange thing is that this place is too famous. Big data has pushed it to him several times when he was watching short videos at home.

So when he saw the stall, he stopped the car for some unknown reason, and then took his beloved " Big Bear " out of the car to buy breakfast.

Wang Kun is usually arrogant and people around him are generally flattering to him. He disdains the horrified and rejected looks around him and even feels complacent about it.

However, a circle of hollow space had been formed around him and the dog. No one dared to approach the big dog. Only a male student who looked like a college student said dissatisfiedly: " You can't bring such a dangerous dog to such a public place. It will affect the business of the store. "

Pei Lu and Si Ting were halfway across the road when they heard a fierce dog barking.

Pei Lu was also startled. She subconsciously looked towards the beating dog. The dog put its two front paws on a young man. Although it did not make any further movements, it was horrifying enough to see such a big dog pressing on a person's legs.

The male student was so frightened that he couldn't move. He stood there stiffly with a pale face and his legs were undoubtedly shaking.

The shop owner finally couldn't help it, and he whispered to Wang Kun in front of the stall: " Dear customer, please take the dog away from the door , it will affect the safety of the guests. "

" Why are you talking so much nonsense? " Wang Kun frowned in dissatisfaction. " Why don't you just pack up for me? Give me the things and I'll leave, right? "

The lady boss whispered, " It's a first come, first served basis. There are people queuing up ahead. "

" Woof! "

A kind-hearted person behind pulled the male student, and someone stood up to accuse Wang Kun. Wang Kun was obviously very rare to be criticized like this in public by a group of people he looked down upon. He picked his ears in dissatisfaction, intending to teach these people a lesson.

The shepherd dog named Big Bear seemed disturbed by these unfriendly gazes and started barking at these people again.

Wang Kun was holding his anger and wanted to teach these people a lesson. When the big dog rushed forward, he let out an " Ah " and deliberately pulled off the rope.

Anyway, his dog wouldn't bite anyone when he goes out with his friends. Besides, it's okay if it bites someone. He has money, so it's just a matter of paying some money.

What made him most angry was that these people dared to talk to him like that.

The big dog rushed several steps away after being let go , and was about to pounce on the thin male student again. Pei Lu, who didn't dare to move forward, couldn't help but let out a low cry. She grabbed Si Ting's sleeve and unconsciously hid behind him.

Just when the big dog was about to pounce on the young man, he suddenly trembled all over and sensed something dangerous.

The thing came silently, but it was like countless invisible demons hiding in the air, wrapping it tightly, and then drilling into its brain, whispering like a demon.

The big bear suddenly felt something cold and gloomy slowly climbing up its back, slowly seeping through every pore along the sensitive nerves and into its flesh and blood, giving it a chilling and trembling feeling of fear.

It's not like the intimidation of a vicious dog, nor is it as shocking as a thunder explosion, but it makes you tremble uncontrollably from your soul to your bones.

It felt the most primitive fear, its four claws became limp, and its eyes flashed, begging for forgiveness.

It carefully followed the direction it felt, turned its head, and met a pair of dark eyes. Those eyes were as deep as the suffocating hidden trench in the bottomless ocean.

Something disturbing was surging in the darkness, with only some sharp flashes of light occasionally appearing in the pitch blackness.

It suddenly stopped there, and even lay on the ground and whimpered softly, which made the people around it breathe a sigh of relief.

Although I don't know what happened to the dog, the good thing is that it didn't attack or bite anyone.

But while others were happy, Wang Kun was not. The discussion in the crowd was getting louder and louder. Seeing the dog lying there motionless, he pulled the rope on the ground when he picked it up. "Big Bear, what's wrong with you?"

The dog shrank its neck and turned its head, its eyes already red, looking like it was about to go crazy.

Wang Kun called his dog several times but got no response, so he raised his eyebrows and was about to kick it.

But when he touched the big bear's terrifying red eyes, he suddenly stood still. Because of his unstable strength, he staggered forward and stepped on the big dog's paw.

The big bear roared and pounced on Wang Kun.

Wang Kun was startled and turned to run, shouting fiercely as he ran: "Stupid dog, I am your master, you still want to bite me?"

But the big dog seemed to want to bite him, and it rushed towards him with great ferocity and ferocity.

Wang Kun was so scared that he turned around and ran, but the ground had just snowed and there was a layer of ice on it, making it very slippery, so he fell flat on his face after running only two steps.

Wang Kun was so scared that he felt the dog was out of control and not as quiet as usual. So he panicked and didn't dare to stop even though he fell down in pain. He just got up and continued running.

But the fat man with two legs could not run faster than the big dog with four legs. He had only run a few steps when he heard a painful howl. He was bitten on the butt by the big dog. It was a cold day and the dog was wearing warm clothes, so it was unclear whether the big dog really bit him or not.

Pei Lu was a little scared at first. In fact, she liked cats and dogs very much. But this dog was too big and looked dangerous. To the dog, she was just a stranger who could attack. No one could help but be afraid.

But because of the dream she had last night, she felt a sense of rejection and disgust towards Wang Kun. His every move as he was holding the dog just now made her hate this person even more.

So when he saw the other person got bitten on the butt by a dog, he was shocked, and the first thought in his mind was that if this thing had a big cut on its butt, it would probably not be able to come out for a blind date.

Wang Kun didn't know whether he was held down by the big dog or he was frightened silly, but he didn't move after falling. At this time, he saw a heavily made-up young woman getting out of the car opposite and jogging towards him.

" Brother, what's wrong with you!! "

As she spoke, she rushed forward to help Wang Kun who had fallen.

" Girls, what would you like to eat? "

The big dog just now scared away half of the customers, so it was Pei Lu's turn soon. After being called, Pei Lu retracted her gaze and turned to look at the owner, and excitedly ordered two of the most popular double meals here.

Si Ting just sat at the table beside her according to her instructions, and then heard the conversation between the two people.

He didn't sleep all night last night. He spent a long time with headphones on, flipping through the thing called a " mobile phone " .

He was not the kind of person who didn't know anything about mobile phones and didn't dare to press any buttons. He even dared to get the source code of the system. He was very brave.

Si Ting was surprised to find that the " network " in this world was very similar to the strings of codes in the system program, but the network here was much more backward than that " headquarters " .

A trace of his mental power invaded the program, walked into the huge " net " , radiated from a point in the middle, and absorbed a lot of things at an exponential rate.

So he could probably understand what the group of people behind him were saying.

When Pei Lu carried a plate over, she saw Si Ting sitting there looking at her.

The other party clearly did not make any unnecessary gestures, but those eyes seemed to speak, and Pei Lu had already moved closer before Pei Lu could react.

They were sitting at a small round table, originally sitting opposite each other. The man reached out and moved a stool for her, so that it was very close to him. The two of them sat together, like a couple who were reluctant to separate for their meal.

Before Pei Lu could even ask the other party what was going on, she heard the conversation of two people behind her. The two boys were dressed like little hooligans and did not look very serious. They were gossiping about everything and it was hard to make out the main points, but Pei Lu still listened very carefully.

Because of what happened just now, these two people were talking about gossip about the Wang family!

"... That woman also had an affair with Qiangzi. When did she get involved with Wang Kun? "

" That's not right. Didn't Wang Kun say last time when he was drunk that he was going on a blind date with Pei Feng's daughter? I've seen Pei Mengmeng before. She's so pretty. If I really met her, would I still like this girl? "

" You believe that? Isn't Wang Kun like that? "

The two people's conversation became more and more obscene, and they didn't mind talking about anything obscene or fishy. They huddled together and whispered to each other. Pei Lu would steal a glance at Si Ting from time to time to see the expression on his face.

It's true that she has seen porn movies and collected all kinds of restricted books, but how can it be the same to listen to this with a handsome guy? The other party was holding up a genius baby learning pinyin yesterday, but it was just a blank sheet of paper.

Pei Lu felt guilty for leading the children astray.

But Si Ting looked at her pink face and suddenly wanted to take a bite.

Just when Pei Lu was about to dig her toes into the ground and move her butt to sit opposite, the two men finally said something shocking –

## Chapter 9

" Just wait and see. This kid is a loser. Who knows who will own Wang Dajun's factory in the future. Isn't he just relying on his family's money? "

" How can you say that? Isn't he the only child in the Wang family? If the money in their family is not his, then whose will it be? "

" You don't know this, right? Hehe, I'm telling you, but don't tell anyone else. Didn't I go to see my second uncle the day before yesterday? They just moved to a new house. Guess who I ran into in that neighborhood? "

" Are you going to tell me or not? Why are you still keeping me in suspense? "

The man's voice suddenly became even lower, but Pei Lu's intuition told her that it was something very important, so she moved closer to the side and back. She wished she could just pull Si Ting up and take his seat.

But she was afraid that the noise she made would disturb the two people, so she didn't dare to move and could only try her best to move towards Si Ting.

Si Ting lowered his head and looked at Pei Lu, who was frowning and listening attentively to the conversation between the two people. From his angle, he could only see her smooth hair and long eyelashes.

Because it was a bit cold outside, even though there was a windproof tent around the place, it was still a bit cold, so Pei Lu's face had a light blush.

The skin of the sea creatures is pale and bloodless, and has no temperature at all. Si Ting has become accustomed to that cold feeling. Suddenly, there is a warm girl who keeps coming close to him and even takes the initiative to hold his hand, which gives him an indescribable feeling in his mind.

The closer the other person got, the more obvious the warm feeling became. It was not as hot as magma, but it was more overbearing than boiling magma. It was overbearing and gentle, and it invaded his shell extremely unreasonably.

Si Ting felt that some dead nerves in his brain were slowly ignited by a small spark, slowly resurrecting from some necrotic location and gradually spreading.

Pei Lu didn't notice anyone was looking at her at all. She was trying hard to hear what the two people were saying.

" My second uncle and his family just bought a house in the Sun Hung Kai District, which is not too far from here . I saw Wang Dajun there! "

" What's so strange about seeing Wang Dajun? "

" But there's a woman next to Wang Dajun! "

" This is nothing new. I've heard people say that Wang Dajun has a mistress behind his wife's back, but Jiang Lijuan doesn't know about it. "

Wang Dajun's current achievements are all due to his good looks. Although he has become a smoker and drinker in his middle age and has started to gain weight, this good looks enabled him to successfully charm Jiang Lijuan when he was young.

Everyone knows that Jiang Lijuan's family is rich and she is capable. The Jiang family has no other sons, and the two elders left all their money to their daughter and son-in-law.

Although the relationship between the couple has faded, Jiang Lijuan is still the stronger one.

No matter whether she knows that her husband has someone else outside, she will not allow Wang Dajun to spend the Jiang family's money to raise someone else's child.

What that person wanted to say was that he not only saw a strange young woman, he also saw a child who looked very much like Wang Dajun!

" Look at Wang Kun. He has a face that is all his own from his mother. It's ok that he looks ordinary, but you should at least learn from your mother's abilities. You didn't learn from your father's face, but you learned from him how to act like a gangster. "

" You didn't see it, that child looks exactly like Wang Dajun, they are just like two peas in a pod. Wang Dajun has no brothers, so whose child could it be if not his? "

" Did he see you? "

" No, I hid, hehe ..."

" ... "

When Pei Lu sat up straight, her waist was twisted and sore, but her eyes were shining and she was so excited that she wanted to jump up and dance!

Isn't this just like giving someone a pillow when they feel sleepy?

Pei Lu was so excited that she had no way to vent, so she picked up a bun .and took a big bite Although the bun was a little cold, the delicious gravy and soft skin in her mouth shocked her again.

It was so delicious! It was just as good as the ones she had eaten at the expensive traditional bun shop before!

Pei Lu was even happier. She looked at Si Ting with sparkling eyes. Seeing that she finally started to eat, Si Ting also turned his gaze to the portion in front of him.

But before he could pick up the bun, something soft was put next to his mouth. Si Ting opened his mouth and took the whole bun into his mouth, and the corner of his lips accidentally touched the other person's pink fingertips.

Pei Lu was stunned for a moment, but she didn't care. She was still chewing the bun with her mouth puffed out. She looked up at him with a smile and said, " Isn't it delicious? And it's so cheap. I found a treasure. "

As she spoke, she took out her cell phone, took a photo and sent it to Ye Ke, and told her that she would bring her here to try it next time.

She didn't avoid Si Ting when she sent the message, she wanted him to learn more about how to use the mobile phone.

Si Ting has already mastered " Pinyin " and can understand what the other party is saying.

He had also learned about this thing last night. It was a software used for long-distance communication. It was the same electronic screen in the hands of the prison guards when he was in the system's prison. It could connect the entire prison.

But the prison guards don't use things like this ...

And piglets.

Pei Lu stared at her phone with a grin. Ye Ke immediately replied to her message and sent her an emoticon of a piggy kiss.

Pei Lu smiled and put away her phone. Seeing that Si Ting had not yet looked away, she winked at him and said, " This is an emoticon pack. You have one too. "

As she spoke, she swiped open the other person's mobile phone that was placed on the table. For convenience's sake, she had set six " 1"s on it last night .

Pei Lu opened the other party's WeChat interface, then clicked on her own avatar, and sent a little rabbit emoticon using Si Ting's phone.

She proudly held up her phone: " See, I got it now. "

Si Ting's name and avatar are very simple, a username of " ." and a pure white avatar.

Pei Lu didn't move, wanting to wait for the other party to get used to the things here and then figure it out on his own.

Pei Lu kept chattering while eating and showing him her circle of friends. Then she casually took a picture of the two of them eating.

On the small dark brown table, two plates are placed close together, with yellow millet pumpkin porridge, white and plump meat buns, green side dishes and the restaurant's specialty pies. The simple foods are squeezed in pairs in the picture, giving a warm feeling.

Si Ting's right hand, which was placed on the table, was inadvertently caught in the camera. His slender fingers with distinct joints were slightly bent, and his skin, which was paler than white porcelain, formed a sharp contrast with the dark table top and tray.

The bulging tendons and blue veins caused by the slightly bent movements have a morbid beauty.

Pei Lu really wanted to stretch out her claws to compare with the other party's. She felt that her hands were definitely more than one circle smaller than the other party's.

Her hands are very small, not the slender type, and not suitable for high-saturation nail polish.

Ye Ke once laughed at her white and tender little hands and said they looked like a little child's.

But it would be strange to suddenly compete with the other person, so Pei Lu immediately suppressed the idea.

In this way, Si Ting's first circle of friends was born.

She happily picked up her phone, clicked the "like" button, and commented on a jumping animal. Si Ting stared at the photo for half a minute. Pei Lu snatched his phone and said, " Let's eat quickly. We still have things to do after dinner. You can also post photos like this in the future. I can see them all! "

As she spoke, she was about to put the other person's phone on the table.

At this moment, a low " hmm " came from my ear .

Pei Lu's hand shook, and the new phone she had just turned on yesterday almost fell into the pumpkin porridge.

When she realized who had spoken, she was so shocked that her arms went limp. If Si Ting hadn't been quick enough, the phone would have really fallen into the bowl of porridge today.

" you ....."

She asked uncertainly: " Were you the one who was talking just now? "

The man put his phone aside, then picked up the spoon and said " hmm " again.

He was still learning, and his brain was taking in too many things to make sense of them all at once. Si Ting decided not to speak until he had mastered perfect pronunciation and the Chinese system.

But the chirping little rose in front of him was so lively. Its bright eyes and the warmth that shone on him like a little sun made him unable to help but respond to her.

When he reacted, he had already answered the other person.

Pei Lu's big eyes widened, and then she smiled happily, her tender red lips curved, which made Si Ting's heart soften a little.

" Can you speak now? "

She was not surprised at all. She knew that he was very smart, as she could tell from the way he learned to dress himself and fiddle with his cell phone.

When we were shopping yesterday, he didn't look like he was shopping at all. Instead, his serious eyes looked like he was conducting a rigorous social observation.

Moreover, people who like to read novels and create have big imaginations. Before going to bed last night, she even imagined what the other person would sound like.

Although it was only one syllable, she still felt that the other person's words were very pleasant to hear. It was a completely different feeling from the language he spoke when he was lying there covered in blood. There was no hostility or coldness, only peace and a hint of tenderness.

" Um. "

This was in response to her previous question.

Si Ting also liked the breakfast of this restaurant. While talking to her, he finished the pie in just a few bites.

Pei Lu stopped eating. She looked at the man eagerly, " Is this the only word you know? "

Can't you say something else!!!

Si Ting turned his head to look at her and wiped a little sauce from the corner of her mouth with a tissue.



The look in his eyes made it clear: What else do you want to hear from me?

Pei Lu looked at him eagerly, feeling more excited than a kitten like her who was catching a goldfish for the first time. " Say something else, I want to hear it. "

She remembered the voice in her dream last night, and the tips of her ears began to feel hot. It sounds very similar to his voice. Could it be that she has the superpower of predicting the future?

The little girl next to him kept staring at him with sparkling eyes. Si Ting couldn't stand it anymore. He turned his head slightly and looked at her face.

His styled hair was a little stiff. A strand of it hung in front of his forehead, resting on his three-dimensional brow bone. Under his dark sword-like eyebrows, his black eyes flickered, and there was a barely perceptible smile in his expression.

" Lulu. "

Pei Lu was struck by an electric current, and the words she wanted to urge him to do were stuck in her throat.

## Chapter 10

Si Ting called Pei Lu's name, which was the same name the woman named Ye Ke called him yesterday.

He knew that the other person's full name was " Pei Lu " , but he thought it would be cuter if she was called " Lulu " .

The sound of the man reading her name penetrated her ears, like a tiny electric current that made half of her brain numb.

Pei Lu closed her mouth and quickly finished her breakfast.

The two of them spent an hour eating this meal. When they came out, the sun was already high in the sky. She also received a text message from Zhao Yazhen, which basically asked her to go home early.

Pei Lu turned off her cell phone and called the landlord of the house she rented. They were going to go see the house now. Having anticipated what would happen to her, she really didn't want to live in that house now.

Besides, she also had to place a fish. Not to mention what those people would say if she brought a man back, she didn't want to leave him in such a dirty place.

Thinking of this, Pei Lu suddenly asked: " What's your name? "

" Si Ting. "

Pei Lu blinked and thought the name was quite nice. She didn't continue to ask the other party what the two characters were. She would know sooner or later .

She didn't expect that she would be in a good mood when she came to this strange place. She didn't know what happened.

The place Pei Lu chose was neither too close nor too far from the address Zhao Yazhen sent her , and she had her reasons for that.

If we were too close, it would be troublesome if we were discovered by that family, but if we were too far, in such a cold day, if we really got into a fight with that family, it would be faster to run back so we wouldn't be freezing on the road late at night.

She is a person who doesn't like procrastination, and she was lucky this time. The landlord was a very straightforward aunt. The two-bedroom, one-living room house was bright and tidy, and there was a large balcony that was carefully decorated.

She took a quick look around and paid the money readily, after all, she was only staying for a month.

But she was a bit of a germaphobe, so she didn't use any personal items in the house. There was a comprehensive shopping supermarket opposite the community. After Pei Lu finalized the house, she excitedly took Si Ting to the supermarket.

Today is the 28th, and there are still two days until New Year's Eve. Everyone is basically on holiday. The supermarket is full of festive red pendants, and the speakers above are playing joyous songs. There are couples walking together, a family of three, and many energetic elderly people in the supermarket.

The Spring Festival is the most important traditional festival here and also a festival of family reunion. On such days, it is almost impossible to find anyone alone.

If Si Ting hadn't been here today, she wouldn't know how she would feel coming to this strange town alone.

Si Ting stood here side by side with her, feeling the popularity which was different from that of the luxury shopping mall last night.

For him, a place like the one he was in yesterday made him feel more comfortable. No one had to care about anyone else's feelings. People's emotions were not contagious, and they were restrained and polite to each other.

Here, people will smile knowingly when they look at each other, shop assistants and customers hold arms to sell goods, children act coquettishly with adults in front of piles of candies, and young couples holding hands will smile at each other while discussing what to eat tonight.

Pei Lu was infected by this atmosphere. Thinking that she also had a companion, she moved sideways and put her arm around the tall man next to her.

Si Ting also looked at her, and she pointed to the shopping cart next to her and said, " You push one too, we're going to buy a lot of things today. "

In fact, she is a bit picky. For example, under normal circumstances, she would feel that the sheets and quilts in the supermarket are a bit plain and there are few styles. But now that express delivery has stopped, she can't care so much. As long as they are comfortable to cover themselves, it's fine.

Pei Lu led the way in front, and Si Ting followed her pushing the shopping cart. Pei Lu picked out two sets of bedding, one black and one white.

Based on her experience of buying clothes yesterday, she felt that Si Ting liked black.

Then there were some daily necessities and food. Although she didn't know if she could use them, she still stocked up on some vegetables and fast food. When she checked out, she spent several thousand yuan and was eligible for the lottery.

Pei Lu herself was a poor person, so she gave this opportunity directly to Si Ting.

Following the other party's instructions, Si Ting stood in front of a big box and took out a red ball.

There are four prizes, the first prize is a red ball, there is only one in ten boxes, and the prize money is 10,000 yuan.

The second prize for the yellow ball is 5,000 yuan, with two in ten boxes.

There is a third prize of basketball in each box, with a prize of one thousand yuan.

The remaining prizes are mostly small items and shopping vouchers.

Si Ting reached into the box and took out a red ball.

At that moment, Pei Lu looked up at the rules, then looked at the red ball in his hand, and fell silent.

A large crowd of people gathered around the lottery area, some were waiting to draw the prizes, and some were just watching the fun. When they saw the red ball in Si Ting's hand, the crowd was suddenly in an uproar.

Pei Lu, who exchanged her bonus with the store manager, finally dragged the other person out of the crowd and escaped from the supermarket.

It was very inconvenient to carry so many bags when going out, and for the first time she realized the importance of having a car.

Fortunately, Si Ting was very strong, and he could carry the heavy shopping bag so lightly that people who didn't know him would think he was carrying cotton.

Move your things into the warm house and it will become a proper place to live.

After the experience in the supermarket, Pei Lu looked at Si Ting with a strange look in her eyes. She really wanted to know if this was a coincidence.

So she knocked on the other person's door with her cell phone. The washing machine in the house had built-in drying and disinfection functions. She could just throw the bed in and spread it out after washing. At this time, the simple bedding had already been made, looking very presentable.

Si Ting was hit in the face by her cell phone. Looking at the words on it, he didn't understand what it meant.

Pei Lu simply handed him the phone and said, " This is a lottery microblog. Please help me forward it. If you win, we'll split the money 50-50. "

Si Ting thought about what happened in the supermarket today and looked at Pei Lu with a smile.

Pei Lu sat back down in the chair, with her arms resting on the back, her chin resting on her arms, and staring at him with her beautiful eyes.

Si Ting reposted several Weibo posts as he was told.

Pei Lu then left happily.

When she finally had some free time in the evening, she sat in the living room and searched the Internet for Sun Hung Kai District. She read the information and then looked at the map. After carefully comparing them, she took a screenshot of the map and drew a circle on it.

Si Ting heard the noise outside, opened the door and came out, and found that she was studying something seriously. He walked over, and Pei Lu raised her little head and patted the seat next to her.

" You forgot, the man they talked about this morning, he kept a concubine here, I want to find out where they are hiding. "

Do one good deed a day. If you cause some trouble to that family, they won't have time to cause trouble for you.

From what those two people said, this woman was a big shot, and she bought a car and a house, which cost Wang Dajun a lot of money. Didn't all this money have to come from the legal wife?

So Pei Lu didn't feel any guilt at all.

Si Ting didn't say anything, just looked at her.

Pei Lu was not a hacker, but she was cautious. When one of the men was watching videos, she secretly glanced at his ID , so she narrowed the scope to people in the same city and searched for that man's ID .

The man was easy to recognize, as his profile picture was a close-up photo of someone wearing sunglasses. He also saw Wang Kun in the other person's follow list, and so he went down layer by layer until he found Wang Dajun's account.

I remembered what the other party said about the day before yesterday, so I looked up the date of the work and found the short video he shot on that day.

She made the right bet, because from the conversation between the two people, Wang Kun and Wang Dajun were the same type of people, both of whom loved to show off. The social accounts of such people must be updated quite actively.

Si Ting sat nearby and watched quietly. After he understood what the other party was doing, a hint of surprise flashed in his eyes.

The other party sent a total of two videos and one photo that day. Pei Lu memorized the background of the intersection where the other party was and found the entrance to the community closest to that location.

" It's probably here. " She looked at the area that she was shrinking smaller and smaller, her mind racing.

She suddenly turned around and said to Si Ting: " Let's go out now. "

According to what they said, Wang Dajun must stay at home during the New Year. The later she delays, the more likely she is to lose such a good opportunity.

1 of Xinhong Community .

Across the street is a row of upper bunk beds, most of which are places to buy food. This is a newly developed area, not very prosperous, and there is nothing worth visiting. Compared with other places, it seems a bit deserted.

Pei Luchun came here to try her luck, because Wang Dajun was neither cautious nor careful. He never forgot to take pictures when he went out to meet his mistress. But he was also cautious. Pei Lu looked through all his previous posts but couldn't find any clues.

On the way, she also looked at a lot of other information, but didn't find any other clues.

Pei Lu was not discouraged. She still had many ways to try. Today she was just trying her luck. Everything depends on human efforts, and she must work hard to protect herself.

The security in this new community is quite strict. After thinking for a while, she found a seat with a good view in the restaurant across the street, ordered two bowls of noodles, and sat down with Si Ting.

When I came out again, it was already night.

Si Ting pushed open the door, and the two of them walked into the wind together.

Si Ting frowned and glanced at the girl who looked a little troubled, then turned his gaze to the residential area. In fact, the security here was not strict at all, so it was not difficult to get in.

He recalled the bird's-eye view that Wang Dajun had taken from the upper floor. He looked up at the somewhat dim buildings and, combined with the scenery of the street, he carefully calculated the proportions and angles in his mind, and then locked his eyes on the 13th floor of a building .

The cold wind blew over, and Pei Lu shrank her neck as soon as she went out. Even at this time, her mind was still working fast, constantly thinking of feasible solutions.

Today's events gave her a good idea. She didn't have to sit there and wait for death, and think about how to resist when things really happened. It would be a more labor-saving method to nip things in the bud.

She also thought of Ye Ke. Maybe she could ask Ye Ke to help check her brother. She remembered that Pei Fan was not a good person. He liked to play cards, but he was not good at it and often lost money outside.

Pei Lu didn't think it was a hassle to ask her best friend for help. It was her ability to get the other party's help.

She was thinking about the connections she could use, and fell asleep while thinking about it.

Maybe because I had been running around outside all day, I slept particularly well at night.

The next morning when she opened her eyes, the sun was already high in the sky. She jumped out of bed and saw

There was a thin layer of snow on the man's coat, obviously he had been out that morning.

Si Ting raised his cell phone towards her, and Pei Lu leaned forward and squinted her eyes to take a closer look.

Then, she was shocked.

The author has something to say:

Everyone should also pay attention to protecting privacy when using social software\_ (: 3)∠ )\_

## Chapter 11

Pei Lu turned around and ran back to her room to pick up her cell phone, which contained messages from Ye Ke, urging text messages from Zhao Yazhen, and the latest one was from Si Ting.

Pei Lu couldn't wait to click on the photo, then enlarge it and saw a woman with bright makeup on. She was holding a little boy's hand. The little boy was just as the gangster said. As long as anyone had seen his face, no one would doubt that he was not Wang Dajun's son.

The phone was buzzing as Si Ting sent her four more photos, all in high resolution with no blind spots. This time, he had nailed the scumbag Wang Dajun to death.

Pei Lu looked at these photos over and over again, and suddenly found that two of them were taken in the residential area.

She looked at the man in surprise, but he didn't want to explain.

Pei Lu thought about it and decided not to ask.

That's just her personality. She doesn't know the other person now, and if the other person intends to hide something from her, she can just make up an excuse to get away with it. She always thought that there was a long way to go and she was confident that she could gain the other party's trust, get into the other party's heart, and receive the other party's sincere friendship.

Even if it's not for my own damn curiosity, it's for the sake of money! !

For the sake of money, I have to fight!

However, when she thought of money, Pei Lu slapped her head and remembered the lottery she forwarded yesterday. She remembered that two bloggers said that the prize would be drawn today.

Pei Lu quickly opened her private message and was shocked to find that she had really won the prize!

I won a big gift package from a cosmetics brand and 5,000 yuan from a lottery drawn by a funny blogger.

She took a deep breath, logged out of Weibo, and reopened the private message, only to find the same result.

At that moment, Pei Lu looked at the man outside as if she was looking at a treasure pot.

Si Ting was suspiciously silent.

He felt that if he got her what she wanted, she would be happy. He didn't do it for any other reason, but he felt uncomfortable seeing her depressed face yesterday.

Pei Lu had looked at him with sparkling eyes many times before, but today ...

It seemed too hot, as if it would catch fire.

Si Ting coughed uncomfortably and avoided the other person's burning gaze.

Pei Lu, however, was in a good mood and moved closer to him, pulling his clothes and asking him to sit down.

Si Ting's clothing preference had already become apparent at this time. He had never worn the down jacket that Pei Lu bought for him.

Pei Lu felt that given the man's natural clothes-hanging ability, he would look good even wearing a sack. But that was a down jacket after all, and no matter how thin it was, it would still be bulky compared to a well-cut coat.

She also discovered that Si Ting liked leather boots more than sneakers. Those shiny leather boots could really enhance his aura. Pei Lu felt that judging from this little preference of the other party, he was definitely not the easy-going person he seemed to be.

She was not stupid. On the night when the system came back to find her, when she said that the other party was very well behaved, she saw the system's state as if it had a virus.

Perhaps, at this moment in life, there is no opportunity to cause the other person's emotions to fluctuate.

Pei Lu came closer in a soft milky blue nightgown and pointed to her phone page: " It's so cold today, let's not go out to eat. Wait until the sun comes out a little in the afternoon, and then I'll go out and get you a bank card. I ... probably won't be here tomorrow, so you can order food by yourself then. "

She checked specifically and found that several restaurants were open on New Year's Eve.

When the time comes, get the card, transfer some money to him and let him buy whatever he needs.

Thinking of this, Pei Lu suddenly felt like she was supporting a pretty boy ... no, a pretty boy. Take care of the other person's food, clothing, housing and transportation, and even rent a house for the other person.

... QWQThe more I think about it, the more they resemble each other.

However, other truly wealthy women would directly buy a large villa for their lovers, but she could only rent a two-bedroom, one-living-room apartment for him, and she would occupy one room herself.

Thinking of this, she felt happy.

Si Ting was looking at the food on the other person's phone interface as he was told, but suddenly he noticed that the girl next to him was smiling.

Pei Lu was discovered by him, but she was not embarrassed. She covered her mouth and simply handed the phone to him.

Then he ran back to his room to change his clothes.

Si Ting looked through the food delivery app, but there was nothing that interested him. After learning about the currency in this world and looking at the unit prices of these meals, he found that they were not expensive, at least not as expensive as the clothes he was wearing .

This comparison is not quite appropriate, but even if Pei Lu doesn't say it, after spending these days together, and recalling the conversation between Pei Lu and the woman named Ye Ke that day using the language that he already understands, it is not difficult to see that the other party is in trouble now.

Si Ting thought that since he had decided to stay here for the time being, shouldn't he also make some money? He couldn't always be passively supported by a little girl?

He slowly and thoughtfully scrolled through the colorful breakfast interface, and did not make a decision until Pei Lu changed her clothes and came out.

Pei Lu waved her hand and simply made the decision for him.

" You'll be right if you trust me. You're new here, so you should try more. That way you'll know what you like to eat. Yesterday we had steamed buns, so today we'll have wontons. "

As she spoke, Pei Lu quickly solved the problem of breakfast.

After breakfast, the gloomy sky outside began to clear up. The sunshine was so bright that the snow outside began to melt.

She opened the window and looked downstairs. There was more red outside than yesterday. She suddenly remembered that her mind was full of daily necessities last night. They should decorate the room to match the occasion.

So she took advantage of the good sunshine and took Si Ting to the nearest flower market.

It's very noisy here. Although there are no popular songs like those played in the supermarket, it is just as lively as the supermarket yesterday.

The air was filled with the scent of flowers, a mixture of various types of flowers, but the smell was not pungent.

Pei Lu was excited when a half-grown girl rushed towards her. The girl looked very happy. She looked back at her mother while running forward and was about to bump into Pei Lu.

She was so scared that she didn't know whether she should hide. If she didn't hide, she would get hit, but if she hid, what if the little girl fell to the ground?

In this moment of hesitation, a big hand pulled her arm and gently moved her to the side, and then Si Ting pulled the child with his other hand.

The little girl who was only busy looking back at her mother was also frightened. She didn't expect that she almost bumped into someone. She stammered for a long time and said, " I'm sorry, brother and sister. "

The mother finally ran over and apologized to the two people. Pei Lu waved her hands: " It's okay, as long as they are okay. "

The little girl looked quite well-mannered. After what happened, she didn't dare to run around. She blushed and handed the flower to Pei Lu: " Sister, this is for you. "

feeling in the cold winter air .

Pei Lu likes flowers with beautiful colors. Her preference is completely opposite to Zhou Jieyu's. Zhou Jieyu likes elegance and simplicity, and the same applies to the decoration of her home. She does not allow her to change it at will.

So for a while, Pei Lu's biggest wish was to have her own house, and then modify it exactly according to her own wishes into her favorite look.

It's a pity that she doesn't have her own house now, but stepping back, this dream can be considered half realized now, because she now has a house that she can decorate freely!

Pei Lu took the flowers from the little girl with a smile, then suddenly became interested in roses and pulled Si Ting straight to where there were a large patch of roses.

Si Ting looked at the two people's hands clasped together, and suddenly from the mixed smells, he smelled a clear and comfortable floral scent.

The stall owner built a tall net rack, which was covered with fresh roses, red, pink, white and yellow.

The stall owner even pointed out to them with a smile: " There are seedlings here. If you are interested, you can grow them yourself. "

Pei Lu was very tempted, but it was obvious that the conditions did not allow it for her now. So she bought a lot of rose vines, planning to go back and fill the house with these beautiful flowers.

In addition to the flower market, she also bought a pair of couplets and some window decorations. Immersed in this festive atmosphere, and then looking at the man behind her, she suddenly felt a little soft-hearted.

Did she really want to leave this man home alone on a day like that?

But for the Pei couple, it is not a solution to keep dragging it out. The sooner the problem is resolved, the better off they will be.

It would be great if Zhao Yazhen could recognize her own daughter like Zhou Jieyu did. Even if she could no longer handle such an intimate relationship with her relatives as before, she would try her best to be nice to the couple.

If everything the system presets really happens, she would better stay away from it as soon as possible.

She is not the type of person who likes to get entangled.



After all, she was not reborn, and she did not really experience all that. She just awakened her memory of being trapped in the siege of fate. Although she had accepted the system's words rationally, she still had a sense of unease in her trance, as if she was in a dream.

It is because of this feeling of trance that pops up from time to time that Pei Lu is eager to go back.

She would have to resolve this matter as soon as possible before she could feel at ease.

When she thought of this, her little worry disappeared.

She went home with Si Ting excitedly and opened a bank card on the way. Then she transferred 50,000 yuan to him and asked him to keep it for his own use.

With the help of the tall man Si Ting, she hung bunches of beautiful and delicate flowers on the balcony, clothes racks, and tables. There was a large cluster left, which she planned to decorate her bedroom.

After cleaning up outside, she rarely threw away the food delivery app, then rolled up her sleeves and started to rummage through the refrigerator. The house was fully equipped with appliances and kitchen utensils, so she prepared to cook something for herself.

She didn't know much, but she was particularly good at one or two things, so she was prepared to show her skills to Si Ting.

While Pei Lu was searching in the kitchen, Si Ting walked into the bathroom.

The bathroom in this house was much smaller than the big one in the hotel, and Si Ting just wanted to take a shower.

He turned on the faucet and cold water poured over his head, but the water, which was almost ice-cold, felt like a burning sensation on his skin.

Si Ting was stunned for a moment, and then his pupils shrank slightly.

Hard black scales quickly grew on his pale skin, and the blue blood vessels slowly turned black, with a faint glow of fire in the black, as if boiling magma was flowing under his skin.

After he was struck by the ancient curse, every year on that day, he would be forced to recall the process of his flesh and blood slowly rotting, dying, and then being reborn.

Unexpectedly, after crossing a dimension, there is still no change.

The author has something to say:

There will be another chapter at 6pm this weekend.

## Chapter 12

Pei Lu found the lasagna dough and sauce from the refrigerator, and also took out the pork filling and cheese from the refrigerator.

She herself loves to eat this kind of high-calorie food, and when she eats too much, she loves to think about it. She plans to bake some lasagna to eat. She boils the water and then puts the noodles into the pot. She hears a "ding dong" from her cell phone and takes out her private message with a numb expression.

This was the fifth winning message she had received today. She had Si Ting forward six Weibo messages in total, and she won a total of 12,000 yuan, a set of cosmetics, five packs of instant noodles, and a box of milk.

Pei Lu stared at the bubbling boiling water, wondering whether she should take Si Ting to buy a double-color ball someday.

Just then, there was a loud noise from the bathroom.

She was startled and the chopsticks in her hand fell to the ground with a "snap". She looked towards the bathroom in fear, turned off the fire quickly, and knocked on the door: "Si Ting, what's wrong with you?"

Pei Lu knocked on the door several times until her hands turned red, but she still didn't hear any movement from inside. She became anxious and gritted her teeth and opened the bathroom door.

After seeing the scene in the bathroom, she reflexively felt a chill down her spine, from her tailbone upwards.

Because the other party had returned to the violent state when they first met, and had become an almost irrational monster. He fell in the bathtub beside him with a twisted posture, and cold water poured from the shower head, washing the black floor.

... The floor should have been porcelain white, but the black blood flowing out from the opponent's large cracked skin had covered the ground and was slowly flowing along the water flow towards the sewer. Pei Lu was still standing there stiffly.

The wounds that suddenly appeared on the other person's body were scabby when looked at closely. It seemed that they were all old wounds, but they were slowly covered and repaired by the body's powerful functions.

But for some reason, the wounds that had already healed opened again, and the black blood corroded the flesh, slowly revealing the cold white bones.

He was not as aggressive as he was the first time he was injured. Pei Lu didn't know if it was her illusion, but she felt that the light in the other's eyes was disappearing little by little.

Pei Lu was shaking with fear.

The impact that heavy-duty blood and blood films or horror movies bring to the nerves is completely different from the impact of this kind of devastated and horrific situation in reality.

The man was lying in the fish tank that was filled with dark red blood. The long black tail was folded in the bathtub in a twisted posture. His arms were limply coiled on the edge of the tank, but all that protruded from the river of blood were cold white hand bones.

Pei Lu looked at the other person's pale face and the pair of eyes that were always indifferent and peaceful but were now tightly closed. Suddenly, a thought emerged in the midst of the accumulated fear.

Does it hurt?

As soon as this idea came to her mind, it was like a lush rose with a young sprout that could cover the entire wall. It grew wildly in her mind and slowly drove away some of the fear.

Pei Lu didn't know how long she had been standing there. When she finally took a step forward with her legs that were stiff and heavy as if they were filled with lead, the other party had already disappeared without a trace, as if he had died in a pool of blood.

Pei Lu waded through the blood on the ground and approached Shark in the bathtub step by step.

When he was only one step away from the other party, the other party suddenly opened his eyes again.

It's just that those eyes are no longer calm, and there is deep violence and perversity in them. Evil Shark noticed the stranger's approach and instinctively wanted to kill him. His cold hand bones strangled the stranger's thin white neck. Before he could use any force, he fell into those worried eyes.

Pei Lu held his arm with both hands. The arm had grown skin again, but it was still shriveled and thin, like a thin skin hanging on the frame.

" Don't be afraid. "

Pei Lu secretly raised a kitten. The little black kitten had strayed outside. When she and Ye Ke found her, it was being bullied by a tabby cat and there was still blood on its body.

But it was obviously so pitiful, shaking with fear all over. When she approached, it still bared its little fangs at her fiercely, revealing its claws hidden under its paw pads, with a defensive look on its face.

Sometimes, their ferocity not only represents danger, but also represents their vulnerability. She grabbed the man's arm and looked at him. As expected, the man did not use any force. So, she slowly moved the other person's arm away.

" Can you still recognize who I am? " Pei Lu knelt in a pool of blood and looked into the eyes of the powerless man. There was a dark flame flickering in the man's eyes, and after the flicker, his eyes became clear again.

Just when Pei Lu was about to breathe a sigh of relief, the clarity of mind at that moment suddenly fell into a cold ditch, and the hanging hand broke the edge of the bathtub.

Pei Lu looked at the man in shock as he was getting weaker and weaker, and his breathing had even disappeared. She didn't know what was going on.

Si Ting's consciousness rose and fell, his nerves seemed to be bitten and torn by countless twisted poisonous insects, his internal organs were all crushed, and his body was burning as if it was rolled through by magma.

This is how he died. He was forced into a bottomless trench by the volcanic lava on the seabed. In that dark place, he was cursed. Although he was immortal, he had to experience the entire process of his death again every year.

He couldn't count how many times he had experienced this, that clear feeling as the blood in his body drained away drop by drop and his consciousness slowly faded away.

As he fell, he inevitably hit the sharp rocks all around him. The increasingly intense tearing and shock shattered his internal organs, and when he fell to the bottom, he miraculously still had his last breath left.

Holding on to that last breath, slowly waiting for death.

Waiting for death for the umpteenth time.

After dying, he would wake up again, accept sacrifices from others, and destroy one world after another burning with war.

But this time, when he was struggling on the verge of death, someone held his arm, and there was a small, cold spot on his burning body, as if it was some addictive poison.

At this moment, Si Ting was just a piece of fish at the mercy of others. He had no strength and could not move at all.

It's not that none of his men tried to kill him at this time.

But he couldn't die, no matter what, he couldn't die, so when he was resurrected, he would just break that man's neck.

"Can you still get up? Get up first ..."

Pei Lu wanted to pick the man up. The blood on the ground had finally dried up. The water that continued to flow from the sprinkler washed away the bloodstains, revealing the white porcelain ground.

Pei Lu didn't know how much effort it took before she found the leak at the bottom of the bathtub. She pulled out the plug and let the blood in the bathtub flow out. Then she took off the shower head, rinsed the blood off the man's body, and filled the bathtub with clear water again. She nervously put her fingers under the man's nose, but it seemed that she could no longer feel any breath, not even the faintest.

Pei Lu's heart trembled, and he was in a state of confusion. He couldn't understand what was going on.

The system entrusted the person to her and asked her to take care of him, so how could she end up killing him ? QAQ

Pei Lu held the man's hand and prayed in her heart. She touched his chest to feel his heart beating, and then touched his forehead to see if he was still warm.

The other person's body was already cool, and this time it was even colder. She felt a bone-chilling sensation when she touched it.

Pei Lu became even more panicked and started talking to him non-stop.

She didn't know whether it was because of the high bonus from the system, or because the other party appeared when she was most lonely and filled a small gap in her heart.

In desperation, she pulled down the rose vine that she had hung on the mirror, stuffed it into the fish tank, and into the other person's hand.

"You can't die ..."

These are the flowers we bought today. You only saw the snow and smelled the flowers, but there are so many things you haven't met and so many days you haven't experienced.

Pei Lu didn't know how to start. She was not used to saying such things to someone she had just known for a few days.

But if it was someone else she had only known for a few days, she might not care at all.

Pei Lu pressed her face against a pink rose. The flower was in the man's hand, but he couldn't hold it, so she grabbed the back of his hand and made him hold the flower.

Because of her powerful movements, the petals were torn into pieces and scattered in the water, emitting a barely audible sweet fragrance.

Because of the way she tilted her head, Pei Lu didn't notice that her long hair fell into the water and became entangled with the man's hair which had grown longer.

At some point, Si Ting felt that the environment around him was getting warmer.

It was as if there was not a cold stone under him, but a little sun at his hand.

The feeling of life slowly slipping away suddenly became insignificant, and a scent of flowers wafted around.

The deadly road beneath his feet seemed to be suddenly illuminated by a ball of fire, and this time the destination was some kind of hope that was still elusive.

But this small fire was enough to make him shudder.

Si Ting's restless heart slowly calmed down. He waited for time to pass and waited to open his eyes again.

He had to see what it was.

Pei Lu didn't know how long she had been there. When the other person was unconscious, he exuded a kind of deathly aura, and people around him were involuntarily infected.

Her nerves were so tense that she had already reached her limit. She couldn't even remember how she fell asleep.

In short, she fell asleep, and when she woke up, she couldn't move.

QAQ neck ... my neck hurts ...

She lay there stiffly, kneeling beside the bathtub, with her cheek pressed against the other's hand on the edge.

The flower had been crushed by her and the juice had stained her face.

Pei Lu felt pain in her legs and neck, and when she moved, she heard a crackling sound in her joints.

At this moment, the person in the bathtub finally opened his eyes, and what he saw was the girl's somewhat anxious face.

Pei Lu was numb watching the dead person open his eyes again. This was not the first time such an incredible thing happened. She had felt this kind of critical blow on the first day.

Moreover, there is an even more serious problem now.

She said weakly, pitifully and helplessly –

“ I can't move. ”

## Chapter 13

Si Ting was stunned, with some complicated emotions in his heart, but the other party was staring at him with those watery eyes and asking for help. He raised his hand, held the other party's face, and wanted to help her up.

Pei Lu, with tears in her eyes, endured the pain all over her body. She held his arm with one hand and climbed the edge of the bathtub with the other hand, crying out in pain and trying to get up.

But when she fell asleep, she was sitting on the ground with her legs bent like that, and now they were numb too.

At this moment, there was a sound of water, and then she felt a chill on the tip of her ear.

A black bath towel passed over her head, and her face turned a little red. From the sound, it seemed that the other party stood up from the water. I don't know what she was thinking about, but her face was getting redder and redder, but her neck was still twisted and it hurt when she moved.

Just as she was about to sit down on the ground, the strong hand supported her again.

Then, her body flew into the air. Pei Lu was startled and leaned towards the man subconsciously.

The other person was already standing in the bathtub with his legs, with the black bath towel only covering his lower body. His chest was still wet, and Pei Lu's sleeve that was next to him was also wet.

Her heart was beating fast, and her eyes were fearlessly glancing at the other person's solid and smooth upper body. She didn't forget to look at his face for a while, and then her heart continued to beat wildly.

Si Ting put her on the sofa. Pei Lu's legs felt better. She pursed her lips, rubbed her neck, and ran towards the bedroom.

Si Ting stood there looking at her back, memories of last night slowly emerging in his mind. His left hand felt a little numb from having been used as a pillow all night. He raised his hand, which was still covered with dried flower juice and the unique fragrance of the other person.

Si Ting took a few breaths, and somehow he felt a dull feeling in the right side of his heart.

He no longer hated his legs. In this world, having two legs was actually more convenient.

But after all, he has lived on the tail of a fish for too long. He once read some information which said that nearly seven percent of the world is covered by ocean. If he has the chance, he would like to go and see it.

Pei Lu's neck was still very sore. She touched her mobile phone with a distorted face and checked the time. It was already six o'clock in the morning. The curtains outside were not drawn, and the red early morning sun could be seen.

The snow outside has almost melted, but the sound of firecrackers can still be faintly heard.

Environmental pollution is quite serious now, so many places have banned the use of fireworks, but Yong'an Town is not as strict as the city, so many people are setting them off secretly.

Pei Lu already felt the flavor of the New Year.

She rubbed her neck as she walked out the door, wanting to see Si Ting again.

The man was standing at the door, already dressed neatly. Seeing her rubbing her neck, he lowered his eyes to look at her, then reached out and pinched her slender white neck.

Pei Lu was startled by the other person's still cool body temperature and shivered, thinking that the other person was going to strangle her again.

But it didn't.

The other person pressed her slender white neck and applied a little force with his fingertips. Pei Lu cried out again. She wanted to hide but couldn't, and could only be pressed by the other person.

The other party let go of her neck in just half a minute.

Pei Lu twisted it twice and was surprised to find that it didn't hurt anymore.

She turned around to look at Si Ting, but his eyes were fixed on her neck.

Si Ting stared at the red mark on the other's fair neck, and a desire with a hint of greed arose in his heart.

But as soon as this thought came to his mind, he suppressed it and looked away.

Pei Lu checked the time, raised her head and said to the man: " Would you like to have breakfast? "

She didn't have dinner yesterday and she was hungry.

" Um. "

The man answered, and Pei Lu smiled and said, " Then let's go out to eat. There is a breakfast shop across the neighborhood. The landlady told me about it on the first day. She said it was delicious. "

She had gotten used to Si Ting's quiet side, which was just right. When she and Ye Ke were together, sometimes they would talk endlessly, which would lead to quarrels. But now it was so good. He would listen carefully to whatever she said and was very well behaved.

Pei Lu suddenly wanted to be nicer to the other person, especially when she thought that she would be going back to Pei's house soon, she felt a little awkward.

Why can't I spend such a good day with my friends?

Pei Lu and Si Ting went out side by side, and ate crispy sesame-covered biscuits and egg pork cutlets at the breakfast shop, and drank delicious seafood porridge with these side dishes.

Although it was New Year's Eve, there were still people going out to buy breakfast in the morning. There was a sign on the door of the shop saying they would be closing soon.

Pei Lu also saw the sports lottery shop next door, but the owner had closed it long ago and gone home to celebrate the New Year.

She felt a little regretful and wanted to pull the lucky guy next to her to buy a lottery ticket.

After finishing breakfast, Pei Lu began to pack her things slowly. Zhao Yazhen sent her a text message, asking her to go back for the reunion dinner. She didn't want to stay at Pei's house, but Zhao Yazhen said that she had even packed her room.

Pei Lu didn't want them to know that she was rich and could rent a house or live in a hotel. She also didn't want them to know about Si Ting's existence. She subconsciously wanted to draw a clear line between herself and the other party.

After hesitating for a long time, she stuffed a set of personal items into her bag, and then set off with a few bags of nutritional supplements bought at the supermarket.

Pei Lu originally wanted to go downstairs by herself, but Si Ting just sat on the sofa in the living room.

Seeing her carrying her bag and leaving, the other party put down his phone and asked: " Are you leaving? "

Pei Lu nodded.

Then the man put down his phone, walked towards her, took the bag from her hand, and wanted to take her out.

Pei Lu followed Si Ting, and the two of them went down the elevator and out of the building.

Pei Lu still couldn't help but remind him: " Remember to eat on time. If you want to kill time, playing games is also good. If you have something, you can contact me on your phone. If you don't want to stay at home, go out for a walk, but remember to come back. "

Si Ting just said " hmm " , still looking the same as usual, but when Pei Lu was speaking, he looked into the other's eyes very seriously. Pei Lu knew that he was listening very obediently. So she narrowed her eyes and smiled, then patted the other person's arm, took the bag from him, and got into the taxi.

Si Ting stood there and watched the taxi disappear around the corner.

His eyesight was extraordinary and he could see behind the not-so-clean rear window that the girl was looking back at him.

One minute after the car disappeared at the traffic light, another taxi stopped next to Si Ting. Pei Lu was preoccupied with her own thoughts and didn't pay any attention to it. While she was going downstairs, Si Ting changed his shoes, took his keys, and put on his coat.

He held the thin ID card in his hand and watched the town pass by.

Pei Lu, who knew nothing about Si Ting's plan, finally turned around. She was still a little melancholy. Si Ting was now alone, and he looked so pitiful during the holidays, just like the left-behind children in the TV shows.

This was the only way she could think of Si Ting because she was a little nervous.

The Pei family is not wealthy, even less wealthy than most ordinary families. She knows that it is not easy for Pei Mengmeng to grow up in such a family, especially a poor family that favors boys over girls.

But Pei Lu didn't think it was her fault. She was also a victim, especially after foreseeing what she would suffer.

But when she tried hard to recall the details, she found that her misfortune started with the scheming Pei family.

Pei Mengmeng was at best indifferent, but seeing her living her old life gave him a sense of superiority and satisfaction.

She was a little clever, like telling Zhao Yazhen her cell phone number and sending them her photos, but –

Pei Lu thought about the days Pei Mengmeng would live under that couple's control in the future, and suddenly felt it was boring.

She thought that they were all unlucky people. If Pei Mengmeng would not cause trouble for her in the future, then she would at most be indifferent to her. She was not nostalgic for her former home, and she really could not do anything to destroy her life or death. She just wanted to live her own life now.

Pei Lu could only keep thinking about it like this to stop herself from thinking about the couple. When Zhao Yazhen called again enthusiastically, she said softly, " I'm already here, I'll be up right away. "

The taxi stopped under a residential complex. This area was a newly built resettlement housing complex and it looked clean.

But according to Ye Ke, the Pei family's hometown is in the village, and the village has not been demolished. Zhao Yazhen and Pei Fan were tired of living in the small tiled house at home, so they urged Pei Feng to rent a house here.

" Oh, kid, why didn't you tell me when you arrived ... I'll go downstairs to pick you up now, just stand at the door and don't move! "

Before Pei Lu could say no, Zhao Yazhen hung up the phone.

Pei Lu's heart beat faster.

Just then, Si Ting sent her a photo of the scenery outside the car window. Pei Lu was attracted by the photo and casually asked where it was.

The other party sent a message back saying that he wanted to go out for a walk.

Pei Lu was staring at her phone when a female voice with a high pitch but full of joy suddenly came from the door .



" Is it Lulu? "

Pei Lu was startled, and raised her head while holding the phone in her hand, and saw three people walking towards her.

The woman was tall and thin. Although her face had many wrinkles, she still had the charm she once had. There was surprise in her eyes, and the smile at the corners of her lips was huge, with an extraordinary enthusiasm.

But Pei Lu felt that she was not looking at her own child, but rather at an exquisite vase that could be sold.

Because no matter what the family in front of her was like, they were her relatives. Pei Lu felt relaxed in her heart, but her eyes were a little hot.

With some warmth in her eyes, she was looking at her mother who was running towards her. She thought inappropriately that she ...

Are you too happy?

Pei Feng was already middle-aged and fat, with a big beer belly. He stood next to Zhao Yazhen, looking up and down at the girl who was standing alone in the cold wind opposite him, and finally his eyes stopped on her face covered by the wide collar of her down jacket.

Before Pei Lu could see clearly the appearance of the young man behind her, Zhao Yazhen had already walked up to Pei Lu in two steps and hugged her.

## Chapter 14

Pei Lu's first reaction was to push the person away, but Zhao Yazhen was holding her too tightly and she couldn't push her away at all.

She was pressed on the other person's shoulders, and finally saw the lazy man at the back. It was a very cold day, and the man went downstairs wearing only a pair of flip-flops. He was wearing pajamas with a down jacket wrapped around his body. He looked impatient, as if he had not woken up yet. When Pei Lu was looking at him, he was also looking at herself.

Pei Fan also looked skinny. Due to years of staying up late, drinking, smoking, and irregular work and rest schedule, there was a dark spot under his eye that would not go away.

His yellow hair had newly grown black roots, and his facial features were somewhat similar to hers, but his decadent temperament and sunken temples made Pei Lu feel that he had kidney deficiency, and he looked a little listless.

His skin was also unhealthily pale, but Pei Lu felt that he was different from Si Ting.

A tall and slender man like Si Ting, although his skin color doesn't look very healthy, but when you stand there, you dare not look him in the eye, because he is a guy who can crush a bathtub with one hand.

When Pei Lu thought of Si Ting at an inappropriate time, her stomach started to hurt again. She still had to pay the landlord for a bathtub.

Because of the pain in her body, she didn't really listen to what Zhao Yazhen said. In the end, Pei Fan reminded her: " If you have anything to say, go upstairs and talk. Don't stand here. I'm freezing to death. "

Zhao Yazhen then remembered that Pei Fan was only wearing a set of thin pajamas, and the floor heating in the new building was sufficient, so it was very warm in the room.

Zhao Yazhen also felt sorry for her son. She was very satisfied with the appearance of her own daughter. She also learned from Pei Mengmeng that Pei Lu was a college student, a real college student, which sounded much more advanced than the junior college that Pei Mengmeng attended before.

She felt that it would be a bit unfair to introduce such a beautiful and educated girl to Wang Kun, that unscrupulous man.

Zhao Yazhen was extremely satisfied, her eyes seemed to be glued to Pei Lu, unwilling to leave her for a moment. She took Pei Lu's hand affectionately, took her upstairs, then immediately took out the clothes she had bought and asked her to try them on.

" I don't know what kind of clothes you like, but I bought you a set of home clothes in case you don't like them. It's hot at home, so take off your down jacket and change into these. "

Pei Lu also felt that the room was a little hot. She took Zhao Yazhen's clothes and followed Zhao Yazhen's instructions, entered the smallest room and closed the door.

The sound of her closing the door was not loud, and the smiles on Pei Feng and Zhao Yazhen's faces disappeared the moment she closed the door.

Pei Fan sat on the sofa with his legs crossed, smoking and saying, " What did I say? I've never seen you before, how could I possibly kiss you? "

Zhao Yazhen was obviously not very satisfied, but she still said: " She can only live here now, and she will kiss him sooner or later. "

Pei Fan scratched his ears: " Sooner or later, she will kiss you? Didn't you arrange for her to meet Wang Kun on the second day of the Chinese New Year? She is indifferent to you now. Do you think she will listen to you? "

Zhao Yazhen glared at him, not very happy with her own son's constant sarcasm and malicious remarks.

But she knew that Pei Fan's words were always unpleasant to the ear. When Pei Mengmeng was here, the brother and sister always quarreled. But Pei Fan was spoiled by his family and was used to being arrogant, and he couldn't change.

" It's just a blind date, what's the problem? I didn't force her to be with Wang Kun.

Besides, look at her delicate and tender skin, you can tell at a glance that she can't endure hardship. Her family is so rich, how could she live a hard life with us?

The Wang family is rich, so she would definitely be happy to follow Wang Kun, so that she can still be rich. "

Pei Fan sneered and stopped talking. He was dissatisfied with his cheap sister's indifferent attitude, but he also knew that if Pei Lu and Wang Kun could really succeed, it would only benefit him.

Pei Feng stared at his phone with a frown on his face, not participating in the conversation between the mother and son. Only then did he say, " It seems that this matter is not going to work. "

" Why? " Zhao Yazhen frowned and turned to look at her husband.

" Wang Kun seems to have been bitten by a dog, and it's quite serious. Now he lies at home all day and can't get out of bed. "

" ah? "

Pei Fan and Zhao Yazhen both expressed doubts at the same time. Zhao Yazhen screamed, " Whose dog bit you? What's going on? "

Pei Fan laughed strangely. Wang Kun was quite arrogant and looked down on people like them, but he was rich and no one could do anything to him. Pei Fan felt very happy when he heard the news.

But it was different for Zhao Yazhen. Her family had no money to give gifts to the Wang family, and if they wanted Pei Feng to get the job of a junior manager in the factory, this was the best solution they could think of.

This has all been agreed upon. If Wang Kun doesn't come out at all, won't this matter be a failure?

" Why are you so anxious? " Pei Feng was also panicked for a moment, but when he thought of Pei Lu's pretty appearance, he immediately calmed down, " You can bring some supplements to visit the patient. Even if Wang Kun was bitten, he must go back to his hometown on such a big day. "

As mentioned before, the Pei family's hometown is in the countryside, and unfortunately this hometown is also Jiang Lijuan's hometown.

The old man of the Jiang family was nostalgic, and after handing over the power to his daughter, he has been living in the village.

Jiang Lijuan goes home to celebrate the New Year every year. She is very filial and always brings her husband and son with her.

The old man in the Wang family passed away early, and Wang Dajun is now a head shorter than his wife, so naturally he had to follow them back obediently.

There is also Wang Kun, the only descendant of the Jiang and Wang families. He is the old man's treasure and he must return every year.

One year, Wang Kun went racing on the highway for fun, and later he had a car accident and broke his leg. Jiang Lijuan still took him back, so Pei Feng dared to say that Wang Kun would definitely go back, so this would not delay their business.

Zhao Yazhen also thought this was a good idea. She calmed down immediately and began to discuss the matter with her husband in a low voice.

At the corner, the door actually opened a crack silently after a slight sound. A girl stood at the door, her ear pressed against the crack, listening quietly to the family's discussion.

Their voices became quieter and quieter, but she had already heard most of what they said. Pei Lu's eyes were fixed on the crack in the door. Her pretty face had an extremely relaxed expression, her red lips gently pursed. She still looked harmless as usual, but her eyes were clear and calm to a terrifying degree.

Si Ting went to see the sea. The high-speed rail station did not stop operating even on such a big day. He took his ID card, bought a ticket, and headed towards Xing City.

He was really not used to this thing, but the system only left this when it left, which showed that it was more important than money. Didn't he use it when he applied for a bank card last time?

Xingshi is a developed coastal city and also one of the top first-tier cities in China. Its prosperity is second only to the capital, and some of its emerging industries even surpass those of the capital.

The first time he took this line with Pei Lu, his attention was all on the car. This time, he looked out the window at the skyscrapers passing by, looked at the towers disappearing into the horizon, and wondered what the sea here looked like.

The seaside is far away from the city center, almost bordering the next city. It's such a cold day and it's a holiday, everyone is reunited at home. He stood on the shoreline and couldn't see a single person.

Si Ting paid for a room, put his ID and cell phone into the room, and then walked into the sea with layers of snow-white waves.

The freezing cold sea water soaked his skin. The man's black hair fluttered softly in the water. His powerful fish tail swayed as he swam farther and deeper into the sea.

His brain was like a sophisticated instrument, projecting a complete sphere with large areas of blue marked out. He saw sunken ships and treasures, human skeletons, and strange deep-sea fish at the bottom of the boundless ocean.

He passed through the dense and dark algae forests of the deep sea and saw the elegant and elongated ribbons of Styx jellyfish dancing by.

He swam past the giant whale and emerged from a long coastline. It was very deep night here. But the lights here are bright, illuminating the world under the night sky as if it were daytime.

Luxury cruise ships sail out of the dock, making it look like a city that never sleeps, even more prosperous than the bustling night scene of Xingshi.

A huge ship passed by him. Si Ting tried to identify their language and try to get in touch with other languages.

Language is information. People in this world learn more than one language, and their language system is also very complex. In addition to the frequently used Chinese, he is also reading English, but he can't quite understand it now.

But he didn't need to understand too much, because the people on the deck were speaking Chinese.

He was about to leave, but a familiar feeling interrupted his movement.

It was a long-lost desire and longing, all filled with an irresistible taste of hatred for him.

"Ye Qiu, your life is not lived in vain. The Li family has never treated you unfairly. Although it has come to this, you must remember the kindness of your eldest brother." The voice was quite cultured, but it could not hide the resentment.

As for the young man he called, Si Ting could only hear faint breathing sounds.

He was seriously ill, and smelled strongly of blood, and was now dying.

They are a pair of brothers, but their dispute is nothing more than a fight over property. This kind of thing is inevitable anywhere.

Si Ting had already planned to leave, and even though he had the familiar feeling of being summoned, he had no plans to do anything.

Not to mention that he is tired of it now, he chose to stay here not for this reason. The reward he can get from this kind of coming and going in the family is too little.

If he had not happened to be in this world, so close to the other party, he would not have been able to sense this degree of desire for conquest and hatred.

Si Ting was not interested in listening any further. When he was about to leave, he heard a " splash " and the man fell into the cold water.

The blood on his body spread rapidly in the sea, turning blood red and dyeing the black and blue.

As the blood spread, hatred and desire grew stronger.

Si Ting turned his head and saw that the other person had his eyes tightly closed, and a soul as small as a hair was floating towards him.

At the same time, the people on the sea began to panic: " Oh no, the evidence is still with him! "

## Chapter 15

Pei Lu still changed into the white casual clothes bought by Zhao Yazhen. She already had a simple plan in her mind, and she didn't want to quarrel with this family at this time.

She knew very well that if she slammed the door and left at this time, she would be the only one who would suffer. Given Zhao Yazhen's personality, she would definitely tell everyone that she was a cold-blooded daughter who didn't recognize her own parents.

Pei Lu rarely cares about what others think, but that doesn't mean she is willing to be framed by a group of strangers.

She is not the one who did bad things, so why should she be criticized?

So she changed into that white casual outfit. The soft sports material stuck to her body. White is generally a safe color, and this sports sweatshirt made her look more youthful and beautiful.

Pei Lu combed her hair into a ponytail. The fluffy high ponytail made her somewhat quiet temperament more lively.

Pei Lu didn't take out all her things. This small house was full of traces of Pei Mengmeng's life.

Zhao Yazhen was busy playing cards these two days and didn't clean up at all.

These must be the things that Pei Mengmeng doesn't want. There are a few novels scattered on the bookshelf, including classics and romance novels. There are a few small gadgets on the table, some of which are old.

There were even some clothes in the closet that Pei Mengmeng hadn't taken away. Those clothes looked a little old, so it was normal for her not to take them away. When she went to be with Zhou Jieyu, she would naturally buy her better ones.

Pei Lu sat on the edge of the bed. She could only see a very small piece of sky through the single small window. She quickly turned her head back.

She looked through her circle of friends. Even though she didn't like dealing with the second generation in that circle, she inevitably added their contact information. On New Year's Eve, her circle of friends was particularly lively.

Ye Ke's family took a plane to a tropical area for vacation. Now the lively Ye family is eating on the yacht.

Even the closest friends are different from family members, because close friends also have their own families.

The rest of the people either post pictures of the sumptuous dishes in their mansions, family reunion photos, or leisurely trips to picturesque places abroad. In short, everyone is having fun in their own way.

She also saw Zhou Jieyu's circle of friends.

Zhou Jieyu seldom posts on Moments, and Pei Ruhai does even less. For Pei Ruhai, WeChat is just a communication tool. He doesn't chat with others, let alone Moments.

Zhou Jieyu's circle of friends contains a simple photo with the caption: A family of three.

In the photo, Pei Ruhai was wearing an expensive suit, Zhou Jieyu was wearing a light blue dress, and Pei Mengmeng was sitting between the couple, wearing a gentle white dress and smiling very happily.

The Pei family's affairs have been a hot topic these days, and there have been all kinds of speculations. Now that Zhou Jieyu has posted this photo, it can be regarded as an explanation. The Pei family's attitude is very clear. From now on, Pei Mengmeng will be the legitimate daughter of the Pei family. She will receive a better life and a better education in the Pei family. She will wear beautiful clothes to attend various New Year parties, and she will receive all the love of the Pei family.

But she will also be strictly disciplined by Zhou Jieyu and become a standard lady in her eyes. Pei Lu herself didn't want to do it, and she didn't know whether Pei Mengmeng would enjoy it. Pei Lu swiped her phone a few more times, and she returned to the main interface, staring at the blank avatar.

She didn't know where Si Ting had gone, whether it was far or not, and whether he would show up if she wanted to meet him.

Pei Lu turned off her phone. When she heard the noise outside getting quieter, she opened the door and walked into the kitchen. She asked Zhao Yazhen, "Is there anything I can help you with?"

She suddenly spoke, which scared Zhao Yazhen. Zhao Yazhen was just busy doing nothing. She spent all her free time playing cards. Neither her son nor her husband might have a meal at home throughout the year. So not only did she not like cooking, but her cooking skills were not very good either.

Just as she was picking through the pile of vegetables, hesitating about where to start, Pei Lu's voice came to her mind.

"What can you do for me? Please get out of here. This place is full of smoke ..."

Zhao Yazhen did need help, but thinking that she still had to take Pei Lu to the Wang family for medical treatment, in order to make her obedient, she had to praise Pei Lu now, let her let down her guard, and accept from the bottom of her heart that they were a family and they were her parents.

So Zhao Yazhen is being particularly polite now. She can't let Pei Lu do any work, at least that's the case for the next few days.

But Pei Lu was brought up in a good family. Although she was usually easy-going and never showed a strong side, if she was really a softie, Zhou Jieyu would have molded her into the good girl she wanted.

So Zhao Yazhen was a little confused as the mother and daughter kept pushing and refusing each other.

When she reacted, she was already standing aside. Pei Lu opened the cupboard, glanced at the seasoning table, and then turned to look at Zhao Yazhen, " There is no salt. "

" Ah ... yes ..." Zhao Yazhen was flustered by the look in those peach blossom eyes, and then she looked at the cabinet that was really not very good and said, " How about ... let's go to the supermarket again, the two of us, and we can talk. "

Many people are discussing the affairs of the Pei family in Xing City, and the topic in Yong'an Town will not decrease because of the problem of the family lintel.

People have long said that Pei Mengmeng's beautiful daughter was given to others for nothing. Many people laughed at her, even when she was playing cards.

Zhao Yazhen herself was also holding her breath. Her own daughter was prettier than the original one. She was going to the supermarket and could take her out to show her to those people.

It was still early, and those who were short of vegetables at home had gone out to buy them.

Once Pei Lu had turned this corner, even if no one persuaded her, she would hold Zhao Yazhen's hand affectionately, smiling beautifully and sweetly.

She is just a considerate and good daughter, she is just an obedient and well-behaved person, everyone has to think so, and everyone has to see it.

In this way, if they really break up in the future, the fault will only be on the couple, because they are greedy and want to take advantage of their innocent daughter.

If they didn't make this plan, then everything would be fine. This meal would be a gift to her family. If they still did that ...

Then you can't blame her.

So Zhao Yazhen discovered that Pei Lu was not that kind of cold person. Before, she could only contact him through text messages and phone calls, so she thought he was that kind of cold-tempered person.

This was also the case when she first came into the house.

But Zhao Yazhen discovered that this girl was just shy of strangers. Once you get familiar with her, she is actually really ...

Zhao Yazhen's pretended happiness was somewhat genuine.

To be honest, even if I know that this is my biological daughter, I haven't seen her for more than 20 years. How much affection can I have for her?

She herself is not a sentimental person and would not do the kind of thing that would please someone else. If she was not needed, she would actually be impatient to put on a smiling face to her.

But now, Zhao Yazhen feels very proud.

There were quite a few people in the community supermarket, and Zhao Yazhen knew almost all of them. In addition, the Pei family's affairs were just getting going at that time, so when everyone saw Zhao Yazhen bringing this young and beautiful girl, they probably knew what was going on, so whether they were familiar with her or not, they would find something to say to her and go up to chat with her.

When Zhao Yazhen heard people praising Pei Lu for her beauty, she couldn't stop smiling. She kept pointing at those people and told Pei Lu, "That's Aunt Wang, that's Aunt Lu, that's your sister-in-law ..."

Pei Lu was not timid at all. She would obediently call whoever Zhao Yazhen pointed at her. She was very pretty and everyone liked her look. Some people even started asking Pei Lu on the spot if she had a boyfriend.

Zhao Yazhen greeted everyone, and then happily went home with Pei Lu, carrying a bunch of things. The smile on her face had not yet disappeared when she got home.

Before entering the house, she met Aunt Wang across the street. Seeing the well-behaved Pei Lu, she was really happy and gave Zhao Yazhen a bag of fruits.

Zhao Yazhen likes to take advantage of others, and she cannot refuse an advantage that comes to her door, so she accepts it with a smile.

Pei Lu didn't say much.

The family gathered around the table to eat a simple lunch and then began to prepare for the New Year's Eve dinner.

The two men of the Pei family sat cross-legged on the sofa watching TV like two old men. Pei Feng fell asleep on the sofa while watching. Pei Fan changed his clothes and went out to find his friends. Someone asked him to go out and play cards.

Pei Lu and Zhao Yazhen were busy in the kitchen. Zhao Yazhen became the one who helped, but she was very happy because her daughter seemed to be really capable. They should be able to have a good meal.

The more she looked at Pei Lu, the more satisfied she was. She didn't have the dignified airs of a young lady, she was pretty, could cook, and was a college student. Wouldn't it be hard for a girl like this to find a husband in the future?

She will rely on her daughter to enjoy her life from now on.

Thinking of this, her smile became more sincere, and her tone became warmer when she spoke to Pei Lu. Pei Lu still couldn't be called enthusiastic, but she talked obviously more, and the two of them behaved like a real mother and daughter who had been together for more than 20 years. Pei Feng woke up once and saw Pei Lu cooking with Zhao Yazhen on the first day she returned home. The dishes were so delicious. His few remaining feelings of conscience ached a little, and he walked in hypocritically and asked the two if they needed help. In the end, Zhao Yazhen smiled and pushed him out.

Si Ting subjectively doesn't want to meddle in other people's business, but he can't stop the curse of greed in his body, which lives on desire.

The essence of what swallowed up those crazy souls was this curse. To put it bluntly, he was just a tool.

Although he is no longer the weak and unable to resist the same shark at the beginning, he was just " reborn " yesterday , when his body was weak.

The curse greedily accepted the soul that was sacrificed, and a large number of memories and negative desires poured into his mind.

Li Yequ, male, is the second young master of the Li family. He has been doted on by his elders since he was a child because he has congenital heart disease. However, it is precisely because



of this that this second young master has been domineering and arrogant since he was a child. He never gets what he wants. of.

The Li family is a prominent family. Li Yeqiu is even a quarter of foreign ancestry. His maternal grandfather's family is a very powerful old money family, with businesses spanning dozens of industries. On his father's side, the Li family is a well-known wealthy businessman.

Li's grandfather made his fortune in the capital in his early years, and later came to Xingshi in response to the open policy. If one really wants to carve out a niche in the prosperous Xingshi, the Li family will definitely be the best choice.

But it was such a young master from such a family who was thrown into the sea and died alone in such a cold sea. The murderer was his biological brother who had always loved him.

After hearing that most of Mr. Li's property was left to him in his will, his brother became evil-minded and took advantage of his trust to kill him in the cold waters of this strange country.

Si Ting put away the information that exploded in his mind, and a hint of hostility flashed across his eyes.

But since he has accepted the soul sacrificed by the other party, he can no longer stand idly by. Just when the group of people on the boat were about to jump down to fish out the body and look for something, Si Ting grabbed Li Yeqiu's arm and dragged him away like a dead fish to be eaten.

He had all the common sense he should have. The hotel required everyone to register their identities. Now this person was hanging on by his horn, so he definitely didn't have an identity. Even if he did have one, it would be useless. Xing City was the Li family's territory.

Si Ting held his breath and brought him back to Yong'an Town.

He couldn't take the high-speed train, but he was lucky enough to get a ride.

The driver was also going back to Yong'an Town to celebrate the New Year. He was a chatterbox, but as soon as the passenger got on the car, he was frightened by the other party's cold aura and shut up. He didn't dare to speak all the way.

Next to him was a young man who was obviously thinner. The young man was covered tightly.

He once suspected that the other party had actually died, but he did not dare to ask. He stepped on the accelerator and tremblingly went to the town entrance to put the man down.

Si Ting's plan to sail around the sea to see the coastal scenery was interrupted at the first stop. He was very unhappy, but his unhappiness was not written on his face. However, that terrifying aura was innate, and no one dared to approach him.

He took the half-dead burden home.

When night fell, bright fireworks exploded in the night sky, and the Pei family's New Year's Eve dinner was served on the table .

Braised spareribs, steamed sole, cola chicken wings, braised prawns, sweet and sour pork, fried eggplant, green pepper and potato, cold jellyfish, and an egg drop soup ...

They were all home-cooked dishes, but both the presentation and the overbearing aroma were several times better than those in ordinary restaurants. Zhao Yazhen naturally praised them highly. She also contributed to the preparation of these dishes, so she felt a special sense of accomplishment.

Pei Feng was also very proud. He never thought that he would be able to have such a sumptuous New Year's Eve dinner, so he excitedly took photos and posted them on his Moments.

" Why hasn't Xiaofan come back yet ... Where has he been going crazy again? He didn't even come back for the New Year's Eve dinner ..."

After taking the photo, Zhao Yazhen started to grumble in dissatisfaction.

She was just about to make a phone call to urge the debtor when the door rang. If you didn't know, you would have thought someone came to collect the debt.

Zhao Yazhen was startled and quickly ran over to open the door. Pei Fan didn't bring his key, so he could only open the door with a sour face.

He had bad luck today and lost several thousand dollars outside, which made him in a bad mood.

Pei Fan was spoiled by the Pei couple. He was the kind of person who only dared to act rudely towards his family members and would find all kinds of trouble when he was in a bad mood. Pei Feng and Zhao Yazhen liked him and always went along with him in a nice way. However, they forgot that Pei Lu was here today.

This huge table of dishes was all cooked by her. Pei Feng and Zhao Yazhen were very supportive, but when it came to Pei Fan, who was in a bad mood and wanted to find fault with everything, it seemed a bit shameless.

As soon as he entered the room, he started cursing, and no one knew who he was cursing. He sat in front of the table like a big boss. Zhao Yazhen served him rice and handed him chopsticks, and he picked up a piece of pork chop.

" Are these ribs too salty? Why not make them garlic-flavored? I'm tired of braised ones. "

" These cola chicken wings are a bit sweet. Why put such a greasy dish next to me? "

" Bah ... this eggplant is too oily. Which restaurant did you order this from? What kind of food is this? It's not tasty and you're paying for it! "

It would be better to give him the money. Now it is becoming more and more difficult for him to ask his family for money!

Pei Fan thought about the mess on his hands and how those people laughed at him today. The more he thought about it, the more unhappy he became. He picked up the wine glass and took a big sip of wine, then slammed the glass heavily on the table. The loud noise made Pei Lu's temple jump.

Pei Fan was clumsy and when she dropped the cup, she hit the fish next to it. The plate was tilted and the soup flowed out and splashed onto her cuffs. Together with the wine that had just splashed out, it created oil spots on the snow-white material.

Zhao Yazhen wanted to scold Pei Fan, as she didn't know that all the meals were cooked by Pei Lu.

But when she saw Pei Fan's increasingly angry expression, she subconsciously didn't want to provoke him. She knew her son's temper, and if Pei Fan overturned the table, the situation would only get worse, so she could only coax him in a gentle manner.

Pei Feng also frowned as he looked at Pei Fan, but the words he wanted to scold him about turned around and were swallowed back.

Just when Zhao Yazhen was about to speak to comfort her, Pei Lu, who was sitting next to Pei Fan, suddenly stood up.

She went to the kitchen and filled a bowl of soup.

The others were completely confused by her, even Pei Fan, who was angry, was looking at her.

Then, he saw Pei Lu walking towards him with the bowl of soup.

Seeing Pei Lu trying to please him so much, Pei Fan finally calmed down a little.

At this moment, Pei Lu suddenly raised her outstretched arm.

She stood in front of her seat, raised the big bowl of steaming egg drop soup over Pei Fan's head, and poured the soup over his head and body without leaving a drop.

She was wearing a well-behaved white sportswear and smiling in a friendly manner, the same friendly manner she used when greeting the aunties outside during the day, but there was a rare sharpness in her beautiful eyes.

There was a kind of compelling arrogance in that sharpness.

She held up the empty bowl and opened her red lips slightly.

" I advise you to say less. "

I also advise you not to mess with me.

The author has something to say:

The next chapter will be v , Brother Ting is coming to pick Lulu up and take her home, the v chapter will be updated at midnight!

## Chapter 16

The room fell into deathly silence.

A few seconds later , screams like pigs being slaughtered were heard from the Pei family , but these screams were immediately drowned out by the sound of fireworks exploding outside.

Zhao Yazhen and Pei Feng were both so frightened that they didn't react at all . Pei Fan's screams were completely instinctive.

The soup has been cooked for a while , so it won't seriously burn people, but if you pour this bowl of soup on yourself , it will definitely not be a good experience.

Pei Lu's originally chaotic mind became clearer after she entered the Pei family's gate , because she finally saw this family in person, so she had a clear mind.

Surprisingly, her troubled heart finally calmed down , and once it calmed down , she became more and more clear-headed.

She really wanted to pretend to be a good daughter and let everyone around her see how disgusting the faces of this family who were ready to sell their daughter for fame and fortune were, but that didn't mean she had to endure the bad temper of this family, especially Pei Fan's. This family has nowhere else to turn and still has to rely on her. How can they have the nerve to show her any displeasure?

She is of use to them now . Pei Mengmeng is no longer here. If she just leaves like this, this family will be helpless.

Pei Lu's behavior of suddenly giving someone a sweet treat and then hitting them with a stick frightened Zhao Yazhen and Pei Feng.

But she had behaved so well throughout the day that the preconceived image of her had been deeply ingrained in the couple's minds.

Pei Feng even saw the oil splashing out of the pot and scalding her hands , which had never suffered any hardship before.

At that time, Pei Feng wondered what kind of family she lived in before. She must have been a young lady who had never done housework . She said in the afternoon that cooking was her hobby , so she must have had a nanny.

Pei Fan is his own son, how could he not see that the other party was looking for trouble?

He himself wanted to slap the man when he saw the way he was smashing plates and bowls, let alone his daughter who had just arrived.

So whether it was Zhao Yazhen or Pei Feng, the blame towards Pei Lu in their hearts only lasted for a second and then quickly dissipated.

Pei Fan, however, had already stood up with a head full of frangipani. He glared at Pei Lu, picked up the steamed flounder next to him and smashed it at the other person's head.

" Are you fucking tired of living? What are you doing? Do you want to die? "

There was tremendous anger in these words. Pei Fan usually hung out with a bunch of bad people and did a lot of immoral things. When he got angry, even Zhao Yazhen and Pei Feng were a little scared.

But today, when he got angry, there were yellow and white eggs on his head, and a few strands of rich red soup flowed down his face, leaving red marks. His bangs were wet and stuck to his forehead, and his body was all in a messy color.

His angry look was somewhat funny in Pei Lu's eyes. She was not even afraid of standing in front of a man like Si Ting, let alone Pei Fan.

She nimbly dodged the plate that Pei Fan threw at her. The plate broke into pieces at her feet, and the food inside fell to the ground, staining the white floor.

Zhao Yazhen screamed in surprise. Seeing Pei Fan raising the chopsticks in his hand to smash again, she subconsciously wanted to stop him. However, the soup on the ground was too slippery. She took a step and almost fell to the ground. She could only hurriedly hold on to the table in embarrassment.

" If you have something to say, talk it over nicely. Don't fight ..." She had the same thought in her mind as Pei Feng. Pei Lu had been cooking for the entire afternoon but Pei Fan got angry at her like this. Even their biological parents couldn't stand it, let alone Pei Lu who had just arrived.

Although the son is important, at least for now, they have to be nicer to their daughter who has just returned.

Fortunately, Pei Feng was stronger than her and rushed forward to stop Pei Fan who was about to take action again.

Pei Fan's anger outside had not yet subsided when he was poured with a bowl of soup at home. Now even his parents, who always obeyed him, began to side with this new girl. The anger in his heart rose up with the glass of white wine in his drink, and it almost burned away his little rationality.

People like him become more and more excited the more they do this. Because of ignorance, they don't care about anything and don't know how high the sky is or how deep the earth is. Due to the long-term tolerance and love at home, he feels that he is the one who deserves the most respect at home, so he can do whatever he wants.

So Pei Fan really wanted to beat up Pei Lu in front of him right away, and even though he was hugged by Pei Feng, he still moved forward regardless.

" Let me go. I have to teach her a lesson today. Don't think you are still the same young lady as before. Don't you know your own worth after entering our house? You dare to hide ... Let me go!! "

It was also the first time that Pei Fan got so angry at his " sister " . When Pei Mengmeng was here before, their relationship was neither warm nor cold, and they could not say a word when they met.

But Pei Mengmeng never bothered him. Usually when he was in the living room, Pei Mengmeng stayed in her room.

They had quarreled before, but Pei Fan won every time, making Pei Mengmeng cry out of grievance. Her parents also always sided with her. How smooth things were in the past, how shocked she was now.

Now that this yellow-haired girl has arrived, Zhao Yazhen and Pei Feng are no longer on his side! !

Pei Fan got angrier the more he thought about it.

But after struggling a few times, he couldn't break free from Pei Feng's arms.

He drinks, plays cards, smokes and stays up late. He behaves in a serious manner all day long and seems not to be easy to mess with, but it's all just for show. He can't actually carry anything on his shoulders or lift anything with his hands. Even when he's in a fight, he's never the one rushing forward.

Pei Feng is at least a little fatter, has done more work, and is stronger than him.

But he just held Pei Fan tightly like this. Zhao Yazhen looked at that and that, holding her waist which she had sprained when she slipped just now, and was so anxious that she was about to cry.

But even so, she didn't think of comforting Pei Lu, whose eyes were red.

Pei Lu took a big step back because of Pei Fan's action just now. From the side, she was the farthest away from the three people , as if she was standing on the opposite side of the three people.

The debris and water on the ground were like a chasm, dividing the two sides. It was based on filth and calculation, which could never be forgiven or erased, let alone crossed.

Pei Lu sneered in her heart, looking at Pei Fan who was still shouting and almost losing his mind, and suddenly walked towards Zhao Yazhen, picked up the plate of braised prawns with the reddest sauce and the most sauce from behind her, and put it directly on Pei Fan's face. How dare she throw a plate at her? No one has ever dared to do this to her!

" Pah! "

The crisp sound of a porcelain plate falling to the ground made Pei Fan's already brilliant face turn even redder, and with his hideous and distorted expression, it even reached a terrifying level.

He only felt a sticky sweet smell in his nose, and he coughed non-stop when he breathed.

"I'm going to kill you" which was almost insane, Pei Lu rushed out of the door, without even waiting for the elevator, and rushed out of the corridor, walking into the darkness and thick night. Pei Fan is really crazy, no one has ever dared to treat him like this!

He had been beaten up outside, but he wanted to save face, so he didn't dare to turn against the other party. But Pei Lu?

Pei Feng was also startled by Pei Lu's sudden action of throwing the plate, and he loosened his strength. Pei Fan was struggling to rush towards the door, and suddenly he was free, and the strong inertia still pushed him forward.

The ground was very dirty, and now there were some braised prawns on it. Pei Fan fell to his knees with a plop. He grimaced and his brain, which had been driven crazy by anger, was shaken violently.

He propped his hands on the mess, broken porcelain pieces piercing into his knees and palms, the excruciating pain made him break out in a cold sweat.

But he only knelt on the ground for a second. Zhao Yazhen's reaction was much faster this time. She quickly helped Pei Fan up and saw blood flowing from his hands.

She wanted to ask him to clean and bandage the wound, but before she could say anything, Pei Fan rushed out without caring.

The lights outside were on all the time. Everyone was having the reunion dinner at this time, so there were very few people at the entrance of the building.

There was only one child in the family who was crying and clamoring with his father to go out to set off fireworks, so the family of three dressed warmly and went downstairs before dinner.

Downstairs, they met the children from next door. The two children were good friends and went to the same kindergarten, so they lit up little stars together.

As she was laughing, a dark figure suddenly rushed out from the entrance of the building, scaring the hostess who was standing behind the child. She screamed, and only vaguely realized it was a girl until the figure ran away.

It was such a cold day, but she ran out in a pair of slippers. Her white sweatshirt was particularly eye-catching in the dark night. Her slender back rushed into the cold wind, making her feel cold just by looking at her.

"Who is that..." She couldn't help but whisper to her good friend who was also a mother standing next to her.

"Don't you know this? Didn't the Pei family who live downstairs from you just recognize their biological daughter?"

My mother-in-law met the mother and daughter when she went to the supermarket during the day. She said that the girl was prettier than Pei Mengmeng, and she was a university student from a prestigious university, and she was also polite."

The woman who asked the question suddenly realized that everyone knew about the Pei family's affairs.

but .....

" Why is this newly adopted daughter running out like this in the middle of the night? "

" Who knows? Maybe they had a quarrel? A family like the Pei family ..."

They didn't say it out loud, but among these people, few really looked up to that family.

Two of the three members of the family only do eating, drinking and having fun and do not do any work. Only the male owner occasionally does some work, but he always works for three days and rests for two days. He is not a serious person.

This family used to always break pots and bowls, so this is actually not surprising.

But before the two of them could get together to discuss something, a man rushed out from the door of the building. This time the man was much taller, and his whole body was burning with anger.

When he rushed out, he almost bumped into someone. There was a smell of oil smoke wherever he went. Upon closer inspection, he saw red blood dripping on the ground.

" Get the hell back here, or I'll beat you to death! "

The two children who were playing Twinkle Twinkle Little Star together were not scared by Pei Lu just now, but were scared to tears by Pei Fan.

When the child started crying, the adults got anxious. The woman who spoke first said with annoyance, " What's the matter? They fought like this on New Year's Day. Isn't it said that the girl is well-behaved and polite? How could she fight with Pei Fan? "

She didn't like Pei Fan in the first place. In her eyes, Pei Fan was just a jerk, just like Zhao Yazhen who spoiled him all day long. If this was her son, she would have strangled him to death long ago.

She was comforting her frightened child while calling her husband and going upstairs.

The man from the two families was standing far away from each other and wanted to smoke a cigarette. He had just smoked half of the cigarette when he heard the noise over here, so he quickly put out the cigarette and came over to ask what was going on.

" Why does it sound like Pei Fan? "

" Yes, it's him. Look at the blood on the ground . It's really unlucky. Let's go back quickly ..."

" It's Chinese New Year, what are they doing? "

" Who knows what they are doing? That girl is so pitiful. Whose child is bad? It has to be the Pei family's. "

He just came back for one day and was already being chased and killed by his own brother . What a miserable life.

The woman shook her head and sighed. When she thought about what her friend had just said to her, that this girl had taken Zhao Yazhen to the supermarket during the day and was planning to cook the family's New Year's Eve dinner herself, she felt sorry for this girl.

Such a home is worse than not having it.

Pei Fan did not catch up with Pei Lu because this area was a bit deserted and the occupancy rate of the relocated houses was not that high. Outside the west gate of the community, it was deserted with only red lanterns. Where was the sign of people?

Pei Fan was so angry that he stood there shouting and cursing. Later he realized that his knees and palms were aching all over. He had no place to vent his anger, so he could only curse even

louder. The security guard at the door frowned when he heard him, wondering what this bastard from the Pei family was doing on New Year's Eve.

Pei Lu ran out in a hurry, and the cold wind blew away the calmness in her mind.

She was walking alone on the cold road. The further she went, the fewer people there were and the darker it became. The cold wind easily blew through her thin clothes and blew the biting chill into her bones.

Pei Lu hugged her arms with both hands, her teeth chattering. She had a cell phone in her pocket, but she knew that it would be impossible to get a taxi at this night.

Not only is there no taxi here, she knew that there were no taxis in the community where she rented a taxi either. Si Ting didn't have his own car and didn't know how to drive. Moreover, the other party said that he had gone out and didn't say when he would be back.

But even so ...

Even so.

Her only good friend was far away abroad, and the only person she could call was Si Ting.

So Pei Lu still dialed the number.

" Can you come pick me up? "

Pei Lu spoke, with uncontrollable grievance in her voice. She tried her best to suppress her tone so that she would not look so embarrassing, but her throat still trembled.

" I want to go home, please take me home. "

In fact, it wasn't really a home, but at least now, it was the only place she could go, and there was the only person who could accompany her.

The man's calm and indifferent eyes always made her feel at ease for no reason, as if no matter how big the problem was, it was just a tiny speck of dust in front of him.

Pei Lu heard the light breathing of the person on the other side in the cold wind blowing past her ears, and her somewhat panicked heart immediately calmed down.

Only then did she realize that, without realizing it, she had walked along a long road and arrived at a relatively busy street with lights all around.

There was a restaurant hosting a New Year's Eve banquet, and at first glance it was the brightest spot on the street.

She had also told Si Ting that he could come here to buy food.

Pei Lu stared at the lights in a daze, and suddenly remembered that Si Ting might not be in Yong'an Town at all.

He had money and there was nothing much to visit in Yong'an Town. He himself said that he might not come back for a few days. In case he went to some faraway place, he might be watching the fireworks on the busy street now.

Pei Lu sniffed, feeling a little annoyed at her own impulsiveness and fragility. Just when she wanted to ask where the other party was, someone on the other end of the phone spoke.

The deep male voice gained some magnetism after being processed through the receiver. It echoed in the silent yet lively night and penetrated into her already frozen and numb ears. It sounded so distant and incredible.

The man opposite said: " Look up, I'm on your right. "

Pei Lu subconsciously looked to the right according to the other party's instructions.



At the entrance of the hotel, under the bright lights, a tall voice moved, and then walked towards her, walking out of the lights, walking out of the cold wind. In his hand was a large, freshly packed bag with the hotel's logo and eye-catching New Year greetings printed on it.

Si Ting was just in a momentary mood. Since he had already accepted Li Yejiu's soul, the other party naturally didn't have to die. However, that person was always talking nonsense, and he was impatient to listen, so he came out.

As soon as he walked out the door, he remembered that Pei Lu once told him that he should have a big dinner on days like this, so he came.

In the usual rituals that required large-scale wars to obtain evil souls, the sacrificer had to sacrifice his entire soul, so naturally he would not survive.

But compared to those commissions that required rivers of blood to be shed, it was extremely easy to keep him alive and let him take revenge. Without that soul, Li Yejiu would not have to die at all. When he woke up again, he would not even be troubled by heart disease.

His body was recovering, and his hopelessly weak heart was slowly coming back to life. Once he regained consciousness, he kept cursing all kinds of people.

Si Ting really wanted him to shut up, but if he found a rag and stuffed it into his mouth now, it would probably cause him to suffocate due to his weak condition, and he would die again just after he had managed to save his life.

If Pei Lu knew about this, she would definitely find a phrase to describe Si Ting now, which is "out of sight, out of mind."

But Pei Lu didn't know it now. Her face was turning blue from the cold, and it was no use huddling into her low-necked sweatshirt. Si Ting frowned when he saw her standing outside so thin from afar.

The moment she saw the other person, Pei Lu felt as if the breath in her chest was melted by something. Her eyes felt a little sore, but like the previous times, she didn't shed any tears.

Si Ting didn't ask a single question. He held her hand with the other hand that was not holding anything and walked towards the restaurant.

Xiao Zhou brought the plate down and saw the handsome guest coming back. He smiled and said, "You forgot something ..."

Hey, why is there another girl here? She must be very cold.

"Sorry," Si Ting smiled politely, "My girlfriend is a little cold, can I trouble you?"

Xiao Zhou was stunned for a moment, then smiled enthusiastically, "I thought it was something else, wait a minute!"

As he said that, he put down the plate in his hand, shouted something towards the lounge, and ran out swinging his car keys.

"I said I would give you a ride in this cold weather, but now there's no car to be found.

Come with me."

Pei Lu had already put on the man's heavy coat, and Xiao Zhou ran over to drive the car. Si Ting followed her and gave a brief explanation.

Xiao Zhou is the son of the owner of this store. He was conscripted into the army. This guy is a social thug. He took a liking to Si Ting and kept talking to him while he was waiting for his meal.

Si Ting has always been a good listener. Xiao Zhou is a freshman this year and just got his driver's license a few days ago. He is trying every way to get used to driving. He also helped deliver two meals to the store this afternoon and drove fairly steadily .

Knowing that Si Ting had come all the way from the other side, he wanted to give him a ride. Not on purpose, but just on the way, he had to deliver a customer order.

Si Ting also spent a lot of money, so it's no big deal to provide a little extra service.

But Si Ting came out to kill time just to avoid Li Yejiu. How could he want to ride in a stranger's car? So he refused.

But as soon as he came out, he met Pei Lu who was shivering with cold.

Pei Lu sat in the car with the heater on. She pulled her coat closer, thanked Xiao Zhou in a listless manner, and began to snuggle into Si Ting's arms.

Si Ting kept his arm on her shoulders, and from the rearview mirror it looked like they were hugging her.

Xiao Zhou drove the car onto the road and said with a smile: " You two have a really good relationship. "

Although he was a chatterbox, he was also a man who could read people's expressions. He knew that this was a problem and that he shouldn't ask too many questions.

Si Ting then remembered how he had introduced Pei Lu to the other party, but things were urgent at the time and he was too lazy to explain their relationship to a stranger.

He glanced at Pei Lu, who was breathing out from under her coat on her hands, not caring at all.

The enthusiastic Xiao Zhou took the two of them downstairs. Pei Lu got out of the car and thanked Xiao Zhou. Xiao Zhou waved his hand nonchalantly, " Go up quickly. It's so cold ...

Hehe, I wish you a happy new year. "

" Well, Happy New Year to you too. " Si Ting turned around and watched Xiao Zhou leave. Another wave of fireworks exploded from the sky, and the car with red lights on disappeared at the end. He suddenly had a strange feeling in his heart.

He had read in the information that the Spring Festival is the most important traditional festival in the country, and everyone should express their gratitude to their family and friends during this festival.

He didn't quite understand why this was happening, but now that he was infected by this atmosphere, he seemed to have touched something again.

Si Ting had no intention of pondering these tiny changes, but he sincerely felt that staying here was a good choice, and every day was different.

Pei Lu pressed the elevator button and waited for him to go upstairs together. Only then did Si Ting talk about Li Yejiu.

At this time, Pei Lu was silently looking at her ringing phone. Zhao Yazhen's number kept flashing on it. She was staring at the phone when Si Ting suddenly said, " There's someone at home. "

Pei Lu raised her head, looking confused.

Just then, the elevator reached their seventh floor.

Si Ting said: " I went out in the afternoon. "

Pei Lu said " Hmm " and said, " Where are you going? "

" Beach, let's go swimming. "

" Then that person ..."

" Rescued from the sea. "

Pei Lu was shocked: " She committed suicide by throwing herself into the sea ? "

She was so shocked that she forgot her phone.

" I guess so. "

" Then why don't you send him to the hospital ... a man or a woman ..."

Pei Lu didn't have the key, so she could only watch Si Ting slowly open the door. She was starting to get anxious, but this guy was acting like nothing had happened.

The door was opened. Pei Lu pushed it open. The room was warm. There were warm lights on in the living room and a person was lying on the sofa.

The man was motionless, his face was terribly pale, his breathing was very weak, and there were large stains of blood on his body, as if he was going to die in the next second.

Pei Lu turned to look at Si Ting. That guy had already put the food he brought from outside on the dining table. The sounds of firecrackers and fireworks were still popping outside.

In this lively atmosphere, Pei Lu stood in a warm room. A handsome guy was setting the table for her, and in front of her was a dying person lying.

This scene and situation were half warm and half weird. When she saw Si Ting waving at him, she looked at the man's face with a bit of a smile, trying to see his appearance clearly.

" You brought him home without even knowing who he is. What if you ... Li, Li ..."

Pei Lu took a step back in shock, but after a while she moved forward without giving up, stretched out a finger and scratched the man's face.

Li Yequ had no strength in his body. He had a vague sense of consciousness, but in that consciousness, he couldn't believe that he was still alive. He couldn't open his eyes, and the sounds in his ears were hazy and inaudible. He could only vaguely feel someone touching his face.

" It really is the young master of the Li family! "

Si Ting looked at Pei Lu's white and tender fingers poking at the man's face with displeasure. He frowned, put down the chopsticks in his hand, and said, " Come and eat first. "

Pei Lu looked at Si Ting, then at the young master of the Li family, and asked, " Will he die? "

" Won't. "

Pei Lu was relieved. She quickly took a hot shower, which only took a few minutes. She had been busy in Pei's kitchen for the whole afternoon and her body was full of smell of oil smoke. She had wanted to take a shower for a long time, but that was not her territory after all, and she felt uncomfortable.

Pei Lu wrapped her hair with a dry hair cap, changed into a pink home dress, and ran to the dining table.

There were both meat and vegetarian dishes on the table, and they looked good. The lunch boxes were wrapped in a layer of thermal insulation that was still steaming.

Pei Lu opened two bottles of Coke and drank with Si Ting.

On this New Year's Eve when only the two of them were together, her mood calmed down and she felt that the spare ribs in this restaurant were particularly delicious.

She threw her ringing cell phone into her room, then excitedly touched Si Ting's cell phone, held it up high, and took a photo.

In the photo, she only showed a scissors hand gesture, with a large table of dishes behind her. The man opposite the table was looking down at the chicken wings in the bowl. Her black hair blocked her face a little, but the half of her facial features that were exposed were excellent and eye-catching.

Pei Lu sent the photo to herself with a smile, and then finally began to ask about the young master of the Li family: " Did you find him on the beach in Xing City? "

She had met Li Yeqiu once, only once, because even in the wealthy class, people were divided into different classes. Based on Pei Ruhai's net worth, he was not worthy of a family like the Li family.

Pei Lu had only met Li Yeqiu once at a charity dinner. As the most favored young master of the Li family, he was very arrogant and domineering. Because everyone knew that he had a bad heart, no one dared to contradict him.

That time she was lucky enough to see the other party get angry. The man was a child of the Wang family. She didn't know what sentence angered the other party, causing the head of the Wang family to apologize in front of many people.

close to someone high up in society always told her to stay away from the Li family . Because if she failed to please them and ended up offending them, it would be troublesome.

Actually, it was that little Wang who was unlucky. Li Yeqiu was in poor health and often stayed at home to recuperate. He seldom went out. The person who should be trained as the next successor of the Li family should be his elder brother Li Zhiqu. He was just a wealthy and idle young master. What could have been so unbearable for him that he had to jump into the sea?

" When he wakes up, you can ask him. "

Si Ting now possesses a piece of Li Yeqiu's soul, and thus all his memories, but the twists and turns are too complicated . For some reason, he doesn't want the girl in front of him to always be thinking about the half-dead man on the sofa.

So he asked, " What about you? "

Pei Lu was startled, knowing that Si Ting would ask sooner or later. She poked at the rice in her bowl unhappily and told him the whole story.

Si Ting said nothing and continued to eat calmly. This attitude made Pei Lu feel very relaxed. She didn't want to tell anyone these unpleasant details anymore.

As she was eating, she suddenly remembered that she had forgotten something important. How could a day like this be without the Spring Festival Gala? So she ran to the living room in her rabbit slippers and turned on the TV.

The actors on TV are dancing in colorful dresses.

Pei Lu was not very interested in the Spring Festival Gala, she just wanted to see the excitement. She said to Si Ting: " Let's make dumplings later. I have prepared the ingredients early in the morning. I will teach you. "

She wanted to make some dumplings for him last night, but they ended up not even having dinner yesterday.

Si Ting naturally had no objection, he was just adapting to the local customs. Seeing that Pei Lu finally smiled and was not as depressed as at the beginning, he was willing to cooperate.

After Pei Lu finished her meal, she spread out all the ingredients for making dumplings on the small coffee table in the living room, and tapped the rolling pin as she called her new apprentice to come over and help.

Si Ting rolled up his sleeves like her. Pei Lu rolled the dough into a thin skin, wrapped it with meat filling, and pinched a cute little rabbit.

The little rabbit has two short ears and a round, fat face, which is bulging because of the stuffing and looks cute.

She also found some sesame seeds and gave the little rabbit small eyes, and used a toothpick to draw an "X" where the mouth should be .

She wrapped several little rabbits in one go. She had done the same thing in the kitchen during the Chinese New Year in Xing City last year, but Zhou Jieyu said she was fooling around. Pei Ruhai didn't say anything and rushed to the airport without even eating the dumplings.

Now she excitedly gave the little rabbit to Si Ting, who looked at the little rabbit and asked, " Is this a dumpling? "

How come this is different from what he saw in the hotel?

Pei Lu pouted unhappily: " These are my original dumplings. "

After saying that, she glared at the man and made wild hints.

Why don't you praise me?

Si Ting smiled, and tried to hold it in, but couldn't help it, so he reached out and touched the top of her head, " That's amazing. "

Pei Lu laughed out loud with joy.

She also wanted to teach Si Ting how to make dumplings. Of course, a beginner could not challenge her complicated method , so she taught him how to make the most common dumplings. All he had to do was spread out the dumpling skin in the palm of his hand, fill it with stuffing and pinch it.

She taught step by step. Si Ting sat beside her, learning carefully step by step. A soft white dumpling skin lay in Pei Lu's palm, almost filling her hand, but it was more than enough to fit in Si Ting's palm.

He learns quickly and seriously, and when the two of them put their dumplings together, they look exactly the same and beautiful.

Pei Lu only made a standard dumpling, and then began to let herself go. She pinched the folds of the dumpling into the shape of a willow leaf, then a fat purse, then an ingot. The tray was as lively as if there was an exhibition.

Si Ting was not very interested in making this thing. He made a few more dumplings, all of which were straight and the number of folds was exactly the same.

Then he watched Pei Lu play with the dumplings like she was playing with plasticine, making them into different shapes. Even the tip of her nose was covered with flour, which made her look both funny and cute.

Si Ting curled the corners of his lips, and then used the tissue on the table to wipe off the flour for her.

Pei Lu was touched on the face by him, and she felt an electric current passing through that small area. She dodged for a moment, then turned her head to look at the full tray and said, "That's enough. "

The appetite of this fish is really proportional to its body size. It actually finished all the dishes on the table.

There was only a plate of braised pork, but the other party didn't like it and never touched it. Pei Lu also tasted it and found it was indeed a bit greasy.

She felt that was enough and it was not good to eat too much late at night.

Pei Lu even felt a little regretful. Why should she cook a table of dishes for that whole family? It would have been much better to cook for someone as supportive as Si Ting!

Pei Lu picked up the tray, turned around and saw the person still lying motionless on the sofa, and suddenly remembered that Si Ting had not answered her original question at all.

So she asked again: " Where did you find him? "

Si Ting answered with an address, and Pei Lu almost dropped the dumplings in her hand. Because that ocean is on the other side of the earth.

The man was really modest when he told her about going out for a walk.

" Then bring him back. It won't be any trouble, right? " Pei Lu didn't want to send him to the hospital at all. She frowned and looked at the young master of the Li family lying on the sofa. The three words " big trouble " were all in her eyes .

Si Ting was a little surprised.

Since Pei Lu knew Li Yeqiu, wouldn't she not know that saving him would be rewarded generously? For a family like the Li family, if she saved their young master, the benefits would be absolutely unimaginable.

But Pei Lu seemed to understand what he was thinking and rolled her eyes: " There are always people watching him. He has fallen to the point where he needs your help. He must be in big trouble. "

If it were her, she would not save him, so as to avoid not only not getting any advantage but also getting herself into trouble.

There was a hint of coldness in her eyes, but Si Ting stared at her in surprise and laughed after a while.

The soft chuckle was so short that she thought it was just an illusion.

Pei Lu saw him laughing for no apparent reason, pouted her lips and walked towards the kitchen, mumbling something, and said to him: " Take out the bottle of red wine in the refrigerator, and let's mix some drinks. "

So the noble young master Li just lay there weak, pitiful and helpless, listening to what they were saying in a daze. He was dying of thirst, but no one paid any attention to him.

The little rabbit's sesame eyes were boiled off by the hot water, and its ears were crooked, making it look a bit weird. But when you bite open the chubby skin, you'll find the perfect blend of salty pork and sweet corn.

Pei Lu had eaten too much at the dinner table just now, so she ate two pieces of food just to show her fullness and then put down her chopsticks.

Si Ting, on the other hand, didn't seem to like dipping the fillings in vinegar or something like that. He just ate them one by one with chopsticks. His movements were graceful and gentle, but not slow at all.

Pei Lu observed him while watching TV. He finished the rest of the plate of dumplings and then slowly put down his chopsticks. She looked down and saw that his belly was still flat and his expression was calm, without any sign of being overfed.

It really is a monster.

Pei Lu was watching the skit on TV while complaining in her heart, but the skit was quite boring and she didn't want to watch it after a while.

She collapsed there, rolled her eyes, and suddenly approached the big monster with a sly smile.

" This TV is boring, why don't we watch a movie? "

Si Ting looked at the wall clock and reminded her: " It's almost eleven o'clock. "

Pei Lu doesn't stay up late and always goes to bed before midnight.

" Stay up till the New Year. Didn't I just tell you? Come on, come on ..."

Her big black grape-like eyes were bubbling with mischief, and she suddenly wanted to see if the big monster was afraid of ghosts.

Pei Lu grabbed his sleeve, as if afraid that he would run away, and chose a horror movie that was just released this year.

This film is a foreign production and was once nicknamed a popcorn movie, meaning that after watching it in the cinema, people were so scared that they scattered their popcorn all over the floor.

Ye Ke had also dragged Pei Lu to see it with great interest, but when the ghost came out, she couldn't stand it and ran away with Pei Lu again.

Pei Lu was also a little scared, but she also wanted to see it. There was someone next to her, so she could be a little braver.

Si Ting didn't refuse her, so she found a movie on her mobile phone and projected it onto the TV in the living room. She also turned off the lights in the living room, leaving only a small standing lantern next to the sofa.

She wrapped herself in a small blanket and moved closer to the man, then stared at the screen with sparkling eyes.

Li Ye qiu didn't know how long he had been lying here.

I always feel groggy.

If this had happened normally, he would have cursed long ago. Who would dare to wrong him like this? But his mind was clear and he knew exactly what had happened before.

That's why he couldn't believe that he was still alive. He could hear the girl's laughter, the sound of the TV, and smell the fragrance of food.

Li Ye qiu thought vaguely that this should not be in the underworld.

He lay there for a long time, and when he woke up again, everything around him was quiet, his vision was blurry and dark, and there were some strange noises in his ears.

Li Ye qiu's heart skipped a beat. Because he had been lying there resting, he finally had the strength to open his eyes.

So he turned his head with great effort and opened his eyes.

Then, he was met with a grim, pale face without pupils.

His eyes rolled back and he fainted again.  
It turned out to be hell.

## Chapter 17

Pei Lu didn't know that the young master of the Li family had woken up , and after waking up he was frightened and fainted again. Pei Lu's whole attention was now focused on the ghost. Because I had already experienced the close-up and real experience in a movie theater, even though I was shaking a little at this moment , I didn't scream out loud.

Si Ting, whose arm had been held by Pei Lu , was a little far away from the injured person , but he noticed the change in the other person's breathing the moment he did.

But the other person's breathing only became heavier for a moment , and then he fainted immediately.

Si Ting turned his head and looked in his direction. Pei Lu had waited for so long, and seeing that this big fish was not afraid at all , she couldn't help but feel a little disappointed . She saw Si Ting looking in Li Yequ's direction , was stunned for a moment , and then asked: " What's wrong? "

Si Ting guessed: " He seems to have woken up. "

" Really? " Pei Lu pressed the pause button on the TV in surprise, then turned on the light and looked in the direction of Li Yequ.

The other person's posture did change slightly, but both pairs of eyes were still tightly closed.

Pei Lu looked at Si Ting in confusion.

Si Ting looked at the ghost on TV whose movements were suspended and guessed: " It fainted from fright. "

Pei Lu: "..."

Pei Lu's few remaining grievances ached for a moment , and then she frowned and said to Si Ting: " What should we do? Can he still wake up? "

The young master already has a heart disease. Can he withstand such a scare?

Si Ting sat next to Li Yequ, looked at him for a while , and then said: " Get him a glass of water. "

" Oh, " Pei Lu nodded obediently, then found a glass and filled it with water.

She even asked Si Ting in a considerate manner: " He is still dizzy now , can he drink ..."

She stopped talking halfway because Si Ting had already taken the glass of water from her hand and poured it on Li Yequ's face. The posture was exactly the same as when she poured a bowl of hot soup on Pei Fan's face.

But looking at the other person's calm expression and the nonchalant posture of holding the cup, those who didn't know would think that this was a messenger sent by God to pour holy water on an unlucky believer.

Si Ting could feel Li Yequ's emotions. His mood had become low, and he even had a desire to die.



This young master had never experienced any storms, so even if he was filled with strong hatred, he was still at a loss.

Only the feeling of suffocation when falling into the sea could make him recall how he died.

The boiled water was poured on his face, and the suffocating feeling of drowning in water came over him again. A strong will to survive and fear of death once again magnified Li Zhiqiu's face in his mind.

When Li Ye qiu opened his eyes, they were red and his heart was beating violently. It had never been so fast before. It was like he was dying and he couldn't breathe.

"Calm down or you're going to have a heart attack again."

An indifferent voice sounded from above. Li Ye qiu did not feel the biting cold of the sea water. Instead, he was surrounded by a kind of warmth. There was a faint scent of sweet wine in the room, which smelled very comfortable, unlike the fishy and cool sea breeze.

Li Ye qiu opened his eyes hard, trying to see where he was.

At this moment, brilliant fireworks exploded in the night sky outside the window, more numerous and louder than any previous time.

Colorful fireworks rose into the sky, blooming with cheers in the lively night sky, lighting up the night sky like day.

Pei Lu said "Ah", turned to Si Ting and said with a smile: "Happy New Year."

Si Ting also smiled at her: "Happy New Year."

That strange feeling came again, as if something was crawling in my empty heart, a dull pain, and a little itchy.

Pei Lu smiled and gave Si Ting a big hug, as if to thank him for staying with her on days like this. After doing this, she realized that she was a little embarrassed. She didn't even dare to look the other person in the eye. She turned around and ran back to the house, shouting as she ran: "I'm calling Xiao Ke to wish him a happy new year!"

Si Ting's movements seemed to be frozen. The place where the girl's arms were wrapped around him seemed to be burning with a circle of fire. He could clearly see the girl's pink ear tips. His fingertips rubbed the empty glass heavily, using some force.

"cough ....."

Li Ye qiu finally reached out and wiped the water stains off his face.

His eyes finally focused from the mist, and he moved his head with difficulty to see clearly where he was. Some memories that did not belong to him popped up in his mind. He was unable to accept it for a moment and could only ask blankly, his voice still a little hoarse as when he first woke up.

"Where is this?"

Si Ting pulled his arm and pulled him up from the sofa. When he met those bottomless black pupils, the thing in Li Ye qiu's brain finally seemed to have seen the spark of Mars and was touched. "Boom" it exploded from his brain.

He remembered.

It was his elder brother who did it!

In the new will that Grandpa had just revised, most of the Li family's property was left to him.

He has always been the one most loved by the elders. He knows that this may not be fair to his eldest brother, but he can only blame his eldest brother for having evil intentions.

This was not what he said himself, but what his grandfather said. His and his brothers' parents died early, and they were almost raised by their grandfather alone.

The Li family made their fortune in industry, and their businesses are relatively solid and traditional. The entertainment industry has been doing well in the past two years, so Li Zhiqiu wanted to get involved in the film and television industry.

This is nothing, after all, this is a business and it can make money if done well.

But what is Li Zhiqiu doing?

He made friends with some wealthy people with ulterior motives, invested in bad movies and worked together to launder money. The female stars under him were exploited and squeezed through strict and unreasonable contracts, and were even used for transactions.

There was even a small star who was forced to sell herself and used as a tool for Li Zhiqiu to build relationships with his partners. The other party had a hot temper and blocked the old man at Li's company. That's how the old man found out about what Li Zhiqiu had done.

The old man was so angry that he was admitted to the hospital, but he did not report it from time to time. It was at this time that Li Zhiqiu was reported by his rival.

money laundering, bribery, improper transactions, tax evasion and other crimes were enough to keep him in jail for life.

That day, Li Zhiqiu knelt outside the old man's door all night long, crying bitterly, and his voice became hoarse. Finally, the old man Li softened his heart.

For the old man, the eldest grandson and the younger grandson are equally important, but the younger grandson is frail and sickly, so he subconsciously pampers him more. The eldest grandson is raised as his heir, so he is naturally more strict with him.

But Li Zhiqiu did not understand the old man's painstaking efforts. He was too eager for quick success and too anxious to prove himself, so he went astray.

He cried so hard that he lost his voice the next day. So, although the old man found someone to help him smooth things over the next day, he secretly asked his lawyer to change his will.

But the old man didn't know that the butler beside him had been bribed by Li Zhiqiu.

So Li Zhiqiu was disappointed and angry when he heard the news.

Over the years, because of Li Yejiu's weakness and debauchery, everyone knew that Li Zhiqiu would be the future helmsman of the Li family.

Things that have not yet been settled become true after being heard too many times. In Li Zhiqiu's inherent cognition over the years, the identity of heir has long been in his pocket.

He never expected that his grandfather would not give him any chance at all and would deprive him of his rights just because of this mistake.

So Li Zhiqiu was extremely angry. He began to lose his temper and hung out all day long.

The people around him started to give him stupid advice. One drunken night, Li Zhiqiu, who had been feeling aggrieved for several days, plucked up the courage to go to Grandpa Li, and a fierce quarrel broke out between the grandfather and grandson in the study.

Li Yejiu went out to watch car races that night. He had a bad heart and couldn't stand the excitement. He couldn't play such thrilling things, so he just watched. In fact, this was also dangerous. The old man kept a close eye on him, so he came secretly.

Li Yequ himself admitted that he had been brought up to the point of being a little ignorant of the immensity of heaven and earth. Relying on the fact that there were people behind him who spoiled and tolerated him, he became uneducated and lawless, using his body as an excuse to live a reckless and willful life.

He admitted that he was a bastard and that he did not understand his grandfather's loneliness and hardship until he was dying and lying in the ward with only his last breath.

My grandfather became critically ill after accidentally falling in the study. His health was not good to begin with, and an old man cannot withstand such a fall.

Li Yequ's confused mind suddenly became clear for once, and he felt that this matter might not be so simple.

So he deliberately followed Li Zhiqiu's words.

Li Zhiqiu drank too much that night. He didn't mean to push the old man. He was in a panic, so he gave away some clues and was caught by Li Yequ.

The old man is now lying unconscious in the intensive care unit, and the doctor said he may not wake up. In fact, Li Zhiqiu is quite conflicted. Emotionally, he hopes that his grandfather is alive, after all, he is his own grandfather.

During the days when their parents passed away, it was their grandfather who accompanied them. There was resentment, but there was also affection.

But from what grandpa said, he no longer has a chance. If grandpa can wake up this time, he might not even be able to keep his last bit of property.

Li Zhiqiu was struggling with this matter when his subordinates told him that his good brother seemed to have mastered something extraordinary and was discussing with the higher-ups something that would be detrimental to him.

Li Zhiqiu was really forced into a corner, and lied that he was taking his brother to the sea to celebrate the New Year, and then threw him off the cruise ship.

This is just a shipwreck, no one will find out the truth.

When all these cruel things replayed in Li Yequ's mind one by one, his heart still ached.

But at the same time he felt something was wrong.

He knew his problem, he had a bad heart, and what happened in the past two days made him unable to sleep all night.

The uncomfortable feeling of being on the verge of death made him cry in regret. While crying and regretting, he masochistically bore the death-like pressure brought by his body.

Sometimes Li Yequ felt like a piece of shit and wanted to die, as if that would make him feel less guilty towards his grandfather.

But he knew he couldn't die because his grandfather was still alive. His health was not good to begin with, and he would be very sad if he knew that his grandfather was dead.

But he didn't expect that for that little bit of money, his own brother Li Zhiqiu would do such a cruel thing to him.

Li Yequ's thoughts began to become confused again. He struggled to sit up by grabbing the sofa, only to find that his clothes had been changed.

The suit obviously didn't fit him. With his height of 1.75 meters and thin body, he couldn't even get his hands out of the cuffs.

Moreover, the back of his neck felt very uncomfortable. He guessed that it was because he hadn't even taken off the tag on his clothes.

Li Yequ slowly digested all the incredible things, such as his bleeding and falling into the sea, his serious injuries and heart attack, and he was definitely going to die.

But he was rescued by someone, who injected some mysterious substance into his blood through his wound, bringing him back to life.

Li Yequ's heart was filled with turbulent waves, and he finally knew what was wrong!

His illness!

His heart!

With injuries of this degree and water that cold, with a body like his, he would not be able to die even if he had a hundred lives. However, when he was in so much pain, the throbbing pain in his heart was caused by emotions and had no physical burden.

He looked at Si Ting in shock.

"Who on earth are you ..."

Seeing that the man had finally calmed down, Si Ting looked at him quietly, then said calmly: "You don't need to care who I am. Anyway, you want to live and take revenge."

The other party expressed it very clearly, and combined with the vague connection in his own mind, he immediately knew that the other party had saved his life and cured his heart disease.

"Your illness is not cured, it's just not as important as before."

Si Ting seemed to have the ability to read minds.

Normally, he would take the victim's entire soul, and the life of the sacrificer would be gone.

But Li Yequ's hatred was much smaller than his desire for killing and abuse, so he did not die.

This was also the first time that Si Ting encountered such a situation.

In the end, he thought he had been able to completely suppress the curse in his body, but he didn't. He could stop "it" from devouring those cruel monarchs, but he ignored this tiny wish.

In such an awkward situation, Li Yequ should be considered his servant now, but he does not need any servant. As far as he knows, the world does not need this either.

"I ..." Li Yequ didn't quite understand what he said. He grabbed his chest blankly and said, "Am I not considered a human being?"

Si Ting thought about it carefully, his fingers tapping on his bent long legs from time to time, and finally found an explanation: "You can understand it this way, but you can still control your body according to your own will, you have not become a walking corpse."

Li Yequ let out a long breath.

The always rebellious young master lowered his head to someone for the first time. He knew that even though the other party looked like a gentleman and spoke to him politely, he was still not free. His life was saved by the other party and he owed the other party a huge debt.

"Thanks."

Pei Lu was actually extremely curious about Li Yequ's affairs. She wanted to eavesdrop, but she was afraid that if she didn't call Ye Ke, the other party would get worried.

So Pei Lu reluctantly suppressed her urge to eat melons and called Ye Ke. The call was connected in a second. Ye Ke shouted loudly on the other end: "Dear, I saw the photos you sent me. Didn't you go home? Why are you having New Year's Eve dinner with Mr. Si?"

The photo Pei Lu sent to Ye Ke was the one that the two of them had taken at the dinner table just now. It was taken with Si Ting's cell phone.

Pei Lu had already told Ye Ke that she gave the mobile phone given by the other party to Si Ting. Ye Ke didn't mind at all. She said that what was given to you is yours, and she has no objection if you use it to make rice cakes.

When seeing the photo, Ye Ke was actually relieved. Pei Lu asked her to find someone to investigate the Pei family, and she had already obtained some things.

This family is actually quite simple. Because they are poor, Pei Fan owes a large gambling debt outside, and now he dares not tell his family.

Ye Ke felt that this family was not doing a good job, because when Pei Mengmeng was here before, this couple treated her in a very lukewarm way, if not abusively. She did not treat Pei Fan as well as she did.

After spending more than 20 years together, it's still like this. How warm can it be when you just get to know each other?

Sure enough, in the following time, Pei Lu told Ye Ke what happened throughout the day.

Ye Ke was so angry that her lungs were about to explode. She jumped up and down and shouted that she wanted to go back and support her right away. Pei Lu had to persuade her to calm down.

" We won't go back. We'll stay away from them . We can still survive without them. I wonder if they can sell their sons if they can't sell their daughters for fame! "

Pei Lu was also very angry, but when she described these things to Si Ting during dinner just now, her anger had already been vented. Even though Ye Ke had such a bad temper, she had to comfort her instead.

" Let's not say these unlucky words. Mr. Si's family went bankrupt at a really good time. You didn't support him in vain. He would really help if something happened. "

It was so cold, and she would feel bad if she had to let her friend walk back by herself.

Ye Ke thought it was better not to mention such unlucky things. After confirming that Pei Lu was safe and had someone with her, she turned to ask about the script.

Pei Lu has been busy these past two days and hasn't had time to start working. When Ye Ke heard that he hadn't written a single word, he scolded her for being a pigeon.

The two sisters quarreled for a while, and finally Pei Lu heard someone on the other end of the phone urging Ye Ke to go somewhere, so she took the initiative to talk to the other party and hung up.

Ye Ke gave Pei Lu a few more worried instructions before a busy tone came from the phone.

Pei Lu exited the call interface and finally had time to check the messages on her phone.

Seemingly realizing that she had made up her mind not to answer the call, Zhao Yazhen sent a long message. The mother and daughter added each other's contact information when they went to the supermarket in the afternoon, so now they finally didn't have to send text messages. Zhao Yazhen sent ten messages in a row, including voice messages and short essays. In the voice messages, one could hear Pei Fan's angry voice.

Zhao Yazhen was in tears as she spoke. Pei Lu concluded that being a parent is not easy and they also felt sorry for their daughter.

But the palms and the backs of the hands are all made of flesh, and today is the day for the family reunion. They are very worried about her being outside, so they told her not to run around outside alone and to go home quickly.

Pei Lu didn't reply.

Now, when she is still the most valuable to that calculating family, she has to show them that she is not a persimmon that can be easily squeezed or flattened.

It would have been fine if they didn't interfere with each other at the beginning, but once Pei Fan provoked her, he had to apologize and repent.

Pei Lu's fingertips holding the phone tightened a little, and her pink fingertips turned white.

She sneered at the messages, then charged her phone and ran out of the room.

Li Yejiu had finished talking with Si Ting and was leaning back on the sofa to organize his thoughts. When he saw Pei Lu appear, he subconsciously felt that this girl looked familiar, as if he had seen her somewhere, but he couldn't remember where.

He has met so many people, and so many people want to please him, it is impossible for him to remember them all.

However, Li Yejiu still tried to think about it, and then asked uncertainly: " Are you from Xing City? "

Although he often traveled around and spent a lot of time at his grandparents' home abroad, he stayed in Xing City the most. If he really saw her, it was most likely there.

" Well, I used to be in Xing City, my name was Pei Lu. "

Li Yejiu slapped his head and said, " You are the child of the Pei family. "

Pei Lu smiled and looked at Li Yejiu who was talking about something irrelevant: " It used to be. "

This had been used very cleverly before, and it immediately aroused Li Yejiu's curiosity.

However, he himself was still confused, so how could he be in the mood to gossip about other people's affairs?

Li Yejiu didn't know how long he had been leaning on the sofa before he began to worry about where he was.

Si Ting would not be patient enough to explain such things to him. However, Pei Lu became interested in Li Yejiu. She poured him a cup of hot water, poured herself a glass of juice, and started chatting with him.

Pei Lu's attitude towards Li Yejiu was very casual. She had never wanted to please Li Yejiu deliberately before, and it was even more so now. Li Yejiu liked her attitude, and after chatting with her, he began to borrow her cell phone.

Pei Lu looked at the clothes that were obviously too big for him, and guessed that all the things on this young master might have been lost in the sea, so she handed him her cell phone.

Li Yejiu made a phone call, but Pei Lu tactfully avoided it and knocked on Si Ting's room.

The man opened the door for her, and Pei Lu went in, then asked: " What should we do about Li Yejiu? "

" Send him home. " There was an upside-down book next to Si Ting's bed. It was obvious that he was reading a book just now. He was reading world history.

Did " he commit suicide ? " Pei Lu asked curiously.

" No, it's his brother. "

Pei Lu: " ! "

Pei Lu smelled the scent of melon, and excitedly moved the stool by the wall to sit next to the bed, then put her hands on her cheeks and approached Si Ting with an interested look on her face.

She pressed her legs against his, blinked happily, and said in a low voice: " What's going on? You guys have been chatting outside for so long, he must have told you. "

Si Ting looked like the kind of person who had no interest in watching melons. Even after Pei Lu hinted so wildly, he just said " hmm " .

That was definitely not perfunctory, it was just that he was too lazy to gossip. Pei Lu swore that she saw a lack of interest in the man's eyes.

She pursed her lips and tugged at the man's sleeve.

Si Ting looked at her and said, " What do you want to know? "

" I want to know, did he ask you to keep it a secret? Tell me. "

These family feuds among the rich and powerful can be used as writing material in the future! Si Ting had never chatted with anyone like this before, so he hesitated for a moment, thinking about how to tell Pei Lu.

But Pei Lu thought that he was still unwilling to open his mouth, so she pouted and swung Si Ting's arm like a swing:

" Brother -- Tingge -- brother-- "

" Tell me about it! "

The word "brother" had eight inflections, sounding weird and delicate, making people want to touch it.

But her watery eyes look at you like an innocent little animal, and you really can't hit her.

It was the tone she used when she usually pestered Ye Ke to stay up late with her to play games, the kind of coquettishness she never showed to outsiders.

In the past, she talked to Ye Ke like this, and although she got what she wanted every time, she would be scolded every time, and she was told that she would be thrown into a pig cage if she talked like this again.

But Pei Lu didn't care. She was shameless and immoral in private with her best friend.

Somehow, Si Ting's series of actions in the past two days, letting her do whatever he wanted and picking her up just in time to go home in the cold weather, made her feel that Si Ting was really no longer an outsider, so she was like a quiet little kitten. , began to show his paws and belly to the people he trusted.

The eight-syllable " Brother " made Si Ting's hand unsteady and he almost missed the book in his hand.

His ears were a little itchy, and so was the hand holding the book. He wanted to pinch those strange and delicate red lips to shut her up, and he wanted to pinch her slender neck to make her scream again.

Si Ting pinched his eyebrows, suppressed the strange thoughts in his heart, and finally put down the book.

Pei Lu's eyes brightened when she saw him loosen up, and she grabbed his sleeves and wouldn't let go.

Si Ting looked at her deeply and finally spoke: " Where do you want to start? "

Pei Lu had had enough of the Li family's gossip. Li Yeqiu had already put his phone on the table and thanked him.

" I need to stay here for a while, do you mind? "

He had just spoken on the phone with Uncle Gao, who was guarding his grandfather. Uncle Gao was the old man's secretary and also his most proud disciple. If there was anyone he could trust at this time, it was only Uncle Gao.

But every failure makes one wiser. Even his own blood brother wants to kill him, let alone other people, so Li Yeqiu did not reveal more information.

" Then do you mind sleeping on the sofa? " Pei Lu asked sincerely.

This is a two-bedroom, one-living-room apartment. Pei Lu would never give up her room, and Si Ting is not that kind of person, so if this young master wants to stay, he can only sleep on the sofa.

Li Yeqiu choked and subconsciously touched the low-quality sofa under his butt that was neither soft nor hard.

" I'm a patient! "

Pei Lu shrugged regretfully : " Then you can only ..."

" I know, I know! " Li Yeqiu lay back down with a promise in a bad mood.

Pei Lu thoughtfully found him a small blanket. The floor heating in the room was sufficient, so he would not be cold even without the blanket.

What's more, as Si Ting said, this guy is no longer a patient now. Once he has rested well, he will be healthier than the young master who had congenital heart disease.

Pei Lu looked at the time. It was already past two in the morning and she was a little sleepy, so she looked at Li Yeqiu again and went back to her room to sleep.

She slept until noon the next day. When she came out of the bedroom, Li Yeqiu was outside crying for food like a naughty child.

" Finally someone comes out, is there any food? " He had already taken some snacks from the refrigerator without being asked, but the young master was used to being pampered and wanted to eat.

Pei Lu was surprised: " Didn't Si Ting take care of you? "

Li Yeqiu felt a little scared when he heard Si Ting's name. Yesterday, all kinds of emotions were pressed in his heart. The hatred eroded some of his rationality. But now he is more sober.

Thinking of Si Ting's existence, he still finds it a little incredible.

He was subconsciously afraid of the man, let alone knocking on the door to ask him for food. Seeing his suspicious silence, Pei Lu kindly heated up a chocolate mochi bread for him and gave him a bag of milk.

Young Master Li probably has put himself in the right position here. He is a young master who can get whatever he wants, but he really has no human rights here, so he can only accept it with a pinch of his nose.



Pei Lu also held a piece of bread in her mouth. She looked at the new message on her phone that Zhao Yazhen had sent her, urging her to go home. After thinking for a while, she finally replied.

Let Pei Fan apologize to me.

Zhao Yazhen seemed to be staring at her cell phone. Less than half a minute after she sent this message, the phone rang.

But what he heard was not Zhao Yazhen's voice, but an angry male voice.

Pei Fan was almost going crazy, having gone mad since last night. After a good night's sleep, he finally calmed down a bit and happened to see his mother talking to that yellow-haired girl.

So he snatched the phone and called, stripping Pei Lu of her phone number. As soon as the call was connected, he started to curse:

"Pei Lu, don't be shameless. You dare to ask me to apologize? Who do you think you are? Even if you kneel down and beg me, I will not let you return to the Pei family. Don't think that ..."

Before Pei Fan could finish his words, Zhao Yazhen burst out with unprecedented strength and snatched Pei Fan's phone.

Zhao Yazhen was almost going crazy. She sent messages to Pei Lu all night and finally got a reply from the other party. How could her disappointing son be like this!

Pei Feng also knew that Pei Lu was very important right now. When he heard Pei Fan acting like this, he was so angry that he stood up and was about to slap him.

But in his anger, he forgot that he still had a half-smoked cigarette in his hand. The cigarette fell on his thigh and burned him, so Pei Feng did not slap him.

"Lulu, I'm your mother. Don't listen to your brother's nonsense. He just speaks harshly, but he doesn't have any bad intentions ... Where are you? Go home quickly and don't let your family worry ..."

Pei Fan was so angry that he rushed over and tried to snatch the phone.

In fact, he felt a little regretful when he said it just now, but he has always acted impulsively without thinking, so he just said it and he would not lose face and apologize.

Pei Fan was still there, breathing heavily with his nose up, looking as if he hadn't caught his breath, when Pei Feng suddenly received a call.

"Don't persuade me anymore. Unless Pei Fan apologizes to me, I won't go back. "

Pei Lu said this coldly, and then hung up the phone. She didn't answer when Zhao Yazhen called again.

After finishing the call, she hummed a song, opened her phone, and wanted to order some takeout.

Master Li, who was drinking milk, came over and asked, "What happened to you? Why are you not at Pei's house? "

Pei Lu glanced at him and thought that she had eaten a lot of gossips from the Li family, and even their pants had been exposed, so it would not be wrong for her to share a little of her own dirty stories.

Anyway, these are not secrets, Li Yeqiu can find out by himself.

"Hey ... what's going on? You're so unlucky. " Li Yeqiu commented.

Now he feels that he is not the most unlucky guy.

Pei Lu shrugged and wanted to ask him if he wanted to eat anything, when she saw Si Ting finally coming out of the room.

Li Yequ lost the energy to chat leisurely with Pei Lu just now, and was as quiet as a chicken.

After a long while, he uttered: " Morning, Mr. Si. "

Pei Lu didn't notice his change and waved her phone at Si Ting: " What do you want to eat? "

Si Ting had heard the noise of the two people outside a long time ago, but he didn't move. He had only finished reading the last few pages of his book.

He reads very quickly, but even a thick history book took him a long time to finish.

In fact, he doesn't need to sleep or even eat, but as the old saying goes, when in Rome, do as the Romans do.

" It's up to you. "

Si Ting walked towards the bathroom, so Pei Lu asked Li Yequ.

Li Yequ was really hungry. A mochi and a bag of milk were not enough to fill him up, so when asked, he asked for noodles without hesitation.

But today was only the first day of the new year, so the restaurants they could choose from were really limited. Pei Lu didn't want to cook, and the two men didn't know how to cook either, so she could only choose a restaurant that was not closed.

This fast food restaurant is a chain, so the taste is basically guaranteed. I can't say it's very delicious, but it's definitely not disappointing.

Just after placing the order, Zhao Yazhen called again. Pei Lu picked up the phone casually, and then heard Pei Fan's angry voice: " Pei Lu ..."

Pei Lu hung up the phone .

She just wanted to hear Pei Fan apologize.

Over there, Pei Fan was furious.

Seeing him shaking with anger, Zhao Yazhen felt a little distressed and blamed her daughter for being ignorant. It was New Year's Day, and she had to make such a fuss?

But Pei Feng, who had been looking serious since he hung up the phone, spoke up at this moment: " Where on earth did Pei Lu go? "

Zhao Yazhen was startled by his rare serious expression and asked in confusion: " What's wrong? "

Pei Feng slammed the table , and Pei Fan, who was about to get angry, was stunned.

" We must get her back quickly. What do you think my job is? It's a piece of fat meat, and everyone is eyeing it! Da Hu just told me that Liu Mazi took his wife to the Wang family to give gifts! "

This really scared Zhao Yazhen. Their family was the kind that didn't know how to make ends meet and they didn't have a penny left.

Now that the money has been spent, they are all counting on Pei Feng to go out and earn money after the New Year. If he loses that good job, their family will really have trouble making ends meet!

" Then what should I do ..." She suddenly became anxious and turned to look at Pei Fan, " Just give in and apologize to her! "

Pei Fan is the kind of person who has to wait for someone to break down and mash up the consequences for him to see before he knows how serious the situation is. But even so, he can't bring himself to do it.

He was also afraid because he owed 200,000 yuan from playing cards, but he didn't dare to say it.

Because he knew that the family had no money, and he had lost all the family's savings last time.

But he apologized to Pei Lu?

What about that damn girl who threw vegetables all over him yesterday?

His palms and knees were all cut by broken porcelain pieces, and they still hurt. How could this be dealt with?

Zhao Yazhen saw his hesitation and couldn't help but pat him on the shoulder, looking very disappointed:

"What's wrong with you apologizing to her? If she and Wang Kun can really succeed, you will be the brother-in-law of the Wang family in the future. You will enjoy a lot of happiness then. The Wang family is so rich, you can get a lot of money as a betrothal gift ..."

Pei Feng was also anxious. He knew that what Zhao Yazhen said was a little unrealistic, but the probability that Wang Kun would fall in love with Pei Lu was still very high. If this could really happen, his job would be saved.

So Pei Fan had to apologize to Pei Lu and let her come back first.

Seeing his own father looking at him like that, Pei Fan subconsciously wanted to shrink his neck. He was still so angry that his face turned red. He felt that he could not swallow this anger. The anger was running rampant in his internal organs, burning his heart, liver, and lungs.

He was about to explode with anger. He wanted to yell and scream. He wanted to catch Pei Lu and beat her up right now, but Pei Feng said to Zhao Yazhen: "Call Pei Lu now, and you ..."

He looked at Pei Fan: "Apologize to her and ask her to come back."

Tomorrow is the second day of the Chinese New Year. The Wang family went back to the village to visit relatives early in the morning. That is the best time for them to visit. Otherwise, there will be so many people visiting the Wang family during this period that it will never be their turn.

Pei Feng still has some residual authority in Pei Fan's heart. After all, Pei Feng had taught him a lesson many times in the past. Now that he has grown up, Pei Feng can no longer catch up with him, but that is still a childhood shadow.

Seeing that Pei Feng was serious, Pei Fan took a few deep breaths again, but when he met Pei Feng's eyes, he felt a little guilty.

For a moment, he even suspected that Pei Feng already knew that he had lost money again. But how could that be?

No.

The last time Pei Feng helped him pay off his gambling debts, he said that if he went to gamble again, he would break his legs. But didn't Pei Feng never mention it before?

This matter went through Pei Fan's mind again, and he began to feel a little guilty. In the end, he gritted his teeth and agreed.

So Zhao Yazhen made another phone call. For the past few days, she had been communicating with this troublesome daughter, and even she felt a little tired.

She blamed her daughter in her heart for being a little girl and not knowing anything.

Soon, the phone was connected again.

"Lulu," Zhao Yazhen smiled again, "Don't hang up yet. Your brother is here to apologize to you. It's his fault. He should talk to you properly. There is just a misunderstanding between you two siblings. Just resolve it ..."

Having said that, Zhao Yazhen handed the phone to Pei Fan.

Although Pei Fan agreed, he still felt uncomfortable. Pei Feng pushed him from behind and he reluctantly answered the phone.

"Come back, I won't bother you anymore."

Pei Feng said this in a dry voice.

Over there, Pei Lu, who was sitting on the sofa with her legs crossed, smiled.

Si Ting, who was sitting next to her on the sofa, couldn't help but look at her.

It was not a serene smile, nor was it a playful and lively smile. The girl's chin was slightly raised, and her glass-like eyes flashed with pride, like a cunning little fox.

Pei Lu curled her lips and said sweetly and patiently: "Pei Fan, do you know what an apology is? To apologize, you have to say sorry."

## Chapter 18

Pei Fan was stunned. He didn't expect that after racking his brains to surrender, he would be met with such an attitude from the other party.

The other party didn't just back down when he had the chance, but actually started to get ahead of me!

The anger that Pei Fan had suppressed so hard began to burst out again.

But Zhao Yazhen was sitting next to him, pressing his shoulders, and Pei Feng was sitting on the other side of him, pressing his thighs. The couple pressed him so hard that he couldn't move. Pei Feng kept signaling him with his eyes, and Pei Fan could only take a few deep breaths to calm himself down.

"right ....."

"..."

"I didn't hear you clearly. Is your signal bad?"

He struggled to get out a word, but before he could finish the remaining two words, the person on the other end started talking again.

Pei Fan wanted to shut Pei Lu's unpleasant mouth. He suppressed his anger and almost squeezed out three words from his back teeth: "I'm sorry."

"Sorry for what?"

Pei Fan: "..."

At this point, Pei Fan had no choice but to say: "I shouldn't have been so angry with you."

He really wanted to hang up the phone , but he was afraid that Pei Lu would not come back, and Pei Feng would not let her go. They really had no money left.

" What else? "

besides???

Pei Fan had no choice but to say: " It's all my fault. Come back. Mom and Dad are thinking about you. "

" Do you miss me too, brother? "

was eating the macadamia nuts that Si Ting had prescribed for her leisurely , just like she was teasing a pug .

Hearing the word " brother " , Si Ting's eyelids moved slightly, then he looked at the girl who was calling. His face remained calm , but his hands were not paying attention and directly crushed the hard fruit shell.

Li Yeqiu next to him looked at him in horror, with an expression that said " this guy is definitely not a human being " .

" Well ... come back. "

Pei Fan began to tremble.

Angry.

" Okay then. " Pei Lu finally gave in.

" I'll be back at eight tomorrow morning. "

" Can't you come back now? " Zhao Yazhen, who had been listening to the phone, became anxious again . " Where are you going to live out there by yourself? "

More importantly , the longer the night , the more troubles one may have. What if this damn girl doesn't want to come back the next day?

Pei Lu did not answer her question, but only said: " See you at the gate of the community at 8 o'clock tomorrow. "

After saying that, he hung up the phone again.

Then, she began to look through the photos that Si Ting had taken of her. Ye Ke also gave her some information. Ye Ke had connections and could find out more information.

That child is indeed Wang Dajun's child, and he is eight years old this year. That means Wang Dajun's extramarital affair has been going on for at least eight years.

The illegitimate child was spoiled and sent to school on the other side of the city. When he was in kindergarten, he pushed a little boy down a high flight of stairs, causing the boy to suffer a cerebral hemorrhage and be sent to the emergency room.

In the end, the matter was settled by paying compensation, and the person who dropped out of school became the victim.

There are many similar incidents, which are not as serious as this one, but they are always smoothed over with money.

That woman doesn't have a job, so it's easy to imagine who paid for it.

Pei Lu's fists were clenched after watching this, she felt that this man was really a piece of shit, a man who ate free rice was supposed to eat free rice, but this man couldn't even have the right attitude to eat free rice!

Coincidentally, the woman has now taken her child back to her parents' home. Her parents' home is in another place and it is unknown when she will be able to return.

Ye Ke's investigation contained photos of the woman, but not of the child. If she had been a second slower and without Si Ting's help, she might not have been able to beat him so hard. Pei Lu packed all these things and saved them in her mobile phone. Then these things will appear in Jiang Lijuan's mobile phone in the form of text messages.

Now her mood finally felt better, so after cracking the melon seeds in her hand, she stood up and walked to the kitchen, planning to make the lasagna that she didn't make that day.

Si Ting and Li Yeqiu were the only two people left in the living room. Li Yeqiu was still a little afraid of Si Ting, especially after he knew that he was not an ordinary person and that he held some very important things in his hands.

But he had no cell phone to play with, nor could he find the TV remote control. Seeing that Si Ting was always on the other side and had no intention of paying attention to him, he encouraged himself and started to make small talk.

" Mr. Si, are you friends with Pei Lu? "

Compared to Si Ting, Pei Lu was obviously easier to approach, not to mention that the two of them had just chatted, and the distance between them was involuntarily shortened, so Li Yeqiu directly called Pei Lu by his name.

But he was still very polite to Si Ting, and there was a faint sense of alienation about Si Ting. Although he is very well-educated and has always been restrained, and always appears gentle and polite, that sense of alienation still exists and will not be easily broken.

" no. "

" Yeah. " Si Ting didn't expect Li Yeqiu to ask such a question.

He really thought about it carefully, but he felt that the word "friend" was not quite accurate.

However, if you asked him to explain it, he couldn't explain it.

Li Yeqiu thought that the two people didn't look like a couple, but it was really strange that they were not a couple but were living together.

He picked a few trivial topics and then tried to make the topic personal without revealing it, trying to get some information about Si Ting himself.

But Si Ting saw through him halfway, and then he stopped talking.

Li Yeqiu also leaned on the sofa and began to think about his own things.

In fact, he was making small talk like Si Ting because, on the one hand, he was really curious about the other person's identity, but on the other hand, he really wanted to think about something else.

He really didn't want to think about his own problems.

Pei Lu in the kitchen didn't know that the two people in the living room had fallen into silence. She took out onions, tomatoes and minced meat and put them into the pot. She added sauce, black pepper and salt for seasoning, and cooked a big pot of delicious tomato basil flavored meat sauce.

Then he stacked several layers of lasagna, meat sauce, and cheese, and finally pushed his container into the oven.

She enthusiastically shared her dinner with Ye Ke and took a photo of the oven and sent it to him, which made Ye Ke scream and say that he would fly back right away to eat her noodles.

Pei Lu's cooking skills are pretty good, but she doesn't know much. But as long as it's something she likes to eat, she likes to study it. Her hobbies are diverse and broad, and she wants to try everything, but she can't say that she is particularly proficient in anything. The only minor achievement I have made is probably writing, but it's only at the level of a small pink.

She also took a screenwriting course during college. In fact, it was her first time writing, so she was not sure how complete she was.

But the script for short videos is much easier to write than the script for TV dramas. She had also written that kind of script for the studio when she was studying to earn extra money, so she felt more confident when she started.

She was also thinking about it in her free time these days, but there was really too little free time these days.

She told the Pei family that she would go back tomorrow because, firstly, she really didn't want to get along with them, and secondly, she had to work tonight.

Pei Lu hid in the kitchen and watched a few video clips. Then her lasagna was ready. The oven stopped working with a " ding " . Although it had not been opened yet, the rich aroma of tomato meat and milky cheese wafted out, penetrated into people's nostrils, and made people salivate. Li Yeqiu couldn't wait to go to the kitchen, " What smells so good? Do you have such a good cooking skill? "

Pei Lu pointed at the oven and handed him the insulation pad.

Li Yeqiu was under someone's roof and felt obliged to take responsibility for the meal, so he brought out today's dinner while holding an insulation pad.

When I came out, Si Ting had already placed the tableware on the table.

Li Yeqiu was so happy. The lunch was not very delicious, but he had no money, so he was embarrassed to say it. But Pei Lu's lasagna smelled so delicious that he could show off three servings later!

Pei Lu took out the leftover wine from last night from the refrigerator, then poured a glass for each of them. The three of them toasted and started eating.

This was the first time they had really started a fire since moving into their new home. Pei Lu didn't want to move after eating and drinking. It was impossible for her to cook and then wash the dishes, so she went back to her room with her phone.

Li Yeqiu was very tactful and volunteered, then smashed everything to be cleaned at the door. Now you don't have to brush anything.

Pei Lu glared at the two grown men and went back to her room to get busy.

Li Yeqiu looked at Si Ting awkwardly as he cleaned up the debris on the ground.

Then he heard the man ask, " When are you going to go home? "

You can't live here forever, right?

Li Yeqiu had thought about this problem a long time ago, so he said: " I will go back tomorrow. "

Li Zhiqiu thought he was dead, but he was not. The matter was supposed to be dealt with in the long run, but he could not delay any longer.

Because his grandfather's condition is very serious, he is closely following Li Zhiqiu's movements. The other party is probably dealing with his posthumous affairs abroad and wants to wait until there is no doubt about the matter before coming back to tell everyone.

But I'm afraid Li Zhiqiu is also worried that the longer he stays, the more trouble he will cause, so he is doing things in a hurry. Li Ye qiu has reliable information that Li Zhiqiu will arrive in Xing City on a flight tomorrow afternoon, so he will go back in the morning.

" You ... " Li Ye qiu thought about it all night. He knew that he was too greedy, but he still couldn't help thinking about that possibility.

" Can you also ... "

Save my grandpa too?

Before Li Ye qiu could finish his words, Si Ting interrupted him and said, " It won't work. "

So Li Ye qiu shut up.

However, I don't know what this topic made Si Ting think of. He rarely took the initiative to speak: " Birth, aging, illness and death are the most normal cycle. Dying is easy, but living is difficult. "

And still alive.

Li Ye qiu couldn't understand it now.

In his opinion, being alive is the happiest thing. After this incident, he understood even more that only by being alive there is hope, and only by being alive can one do things that he did not have time to do.

But Si Ting continued reading his book, so he tactfully shut up. He searched around and finally found the remote control, so he just started watching TV.

" Then you should come back with me tomorrow. I want my family to meet the person who saved my life. "

This is not only politeness, he is also clearly telling the other party that he will repay the other party.

Si Ting subconsciously wanted to refuse.

But he thought about it again and changed his mind.

As soon as Pei Lu touched the keyboard, his ideas flowed freely. He worked on it until late at night, and only fell into a deep sleep at two in the morning.

She set an alarm, and when it rang on time the next day, she was startled and jumped up from the bed.

Because she went to bed too late and got up a little early, there was a little blue under her eyes. Pei Lu hissed not allowing herself , to look so haggard. She washed her face and took out her cosmetics to apply some foundation on herself.

She has a good foundation, with regular and beautiful facial features, naturally red lips and naturally dark eyebrows. Even after covering up the small blemishes caused by fatigue, she is still that bright and beautiful girl.

She hurried back and forth from the bathroom to the room and didn't notice that there was breakfast on the table outside.

When she came out again, she found black rice porridge and fried rice on the table.

She looked at it, sat down at the table, and decided that it must be hers.



So she opened the box of fried rice and put a straw in the cup of porridge.

The door of Si Ting's room was opened, and the man was wearing the suit that she had prepared for him in the mall.

As soon as the door opened, Pei Lu looked up subconsciously, and then the fried rice in the spoon shook and fell back into the box.

She just tried on the size hurriedly last time, and Pei Lu knew that the man would look very handsome in a suit with his figure and appearance, but when she saw him wearing that casual black suit, she was still shocked by his beauty.

The other person buttoned the collar of his white shirt to the last button, hiding half of his sexy throat. Between the black and white, his broad shoulders showed his strong yet restrained aura. Some big shot who had just come down from a negotiation table.

You must wear a tie!!

Pei Lu took a big mouthful of porridge to replenish her blood, then walked over and took the tie from the man's hand.

The man obediently let her take the black tie from his hand, then he lowered his head and bent his body cooperatively.

Pei Lu lifted up his collar, then wrapped the black silk tie around the collar of his shirt and tied a knot carefully.

" Want to go out? "

" Yes, with Li Yequiu. "

Although Pei Lu didn't know what Si Ting was going to do, she didn't ask much.

She helped him put his collar back on and adjusted it carefully. Her fingers accidentally touched his Adam's apple, and her fingertips trembled.

She looked up, stared into the man's eyes, and suddenly wanted to pull his tie and kiss him.

After all, she is an lsp, and she has to admit that the other person's appearance is her favorite.

But considering that the other party was a monster, she didn't dare to rush forward.

The other person looks like a serious person. If I deceive him because of lust, and then tell him that we are in a relationship, I don't have any idea of taking responsibility for the time being. Will he crush himself to death like he crushed the bathtub?

Pei Lu never thought about the possibility that the other party would not take the bait if she pursued him seriously.

If she is truly good to someone, there is no way that person will not fall for her. She has calculated every detail in her mind very clearly, but she just won't do that because she still prefers to please herself.

The door was ajar. Li Yequiu did not tell the driver his current location. He just made an appointment with the driver who came to pick him up to meet at a place.

He was standing outside and making a phone call just now. The door was ajar. After he finished the call, he pushed the door open and came in. When he came in, he saw a man and a woman at the door.

The girl had just fixed the man's black tie. Her fingers looked white and round against the black tie. The tall man kept his head down and waited patiently for her to get everything done.

His head was slightly lowered, his eyes fixed on the other person's face, with a kind of concentration that Li Yequiu had never seen before.

As soon as Li Yeqiu made a move, Pei Lu subconsciously turned around in the direction of the voice. She let go of her tie, took a step back, and then nodded with satisfaction.

Li Yeqiu also said " Good morning " to Pei Lu , then looked at Si Ting: " Let's go? "

Si Ting walked to the entrance and put on his coat, then turned to look at Pei Lu who was eating fried rice with a spoon in her mouth: " Call me if you need anything. "

Pei Lu nodded obediently, then stretched out her paw and waved at the two of them.

The room fell silent again. She also received news from Zhao Yazhen that the family planned to go back to their hometown today to visit Zhao Yazhen's parents' home to wish them a happy new year. They would go to the gate of the community to wait for Pei Lu, and they would go there together when she arrived.

Here it comes, it's finally here.

Pei Lu quickly finished her breakfast and got into the car with the driver she had arranged.

She was wondering if she should buy a car. In the past, there was a driver to pick her up when she went to pick it up, and she had never thought about this issue, but now it is really inconvenient to go back and forth.

Pei Lu counted her balance on her fingers, then silently decided to put the matter aside for now. Maybe next time the system appears, she can negotiate terms with the other party and add some money.

It was already half past eight when she met up with the Pei family. Pei Fan had obviously been persuaded and waited in the car for half an hour. He did not get angry when he saw Pei Lu. The Pei family's car was parked outside the community. It was obvious that it was not a very new car. When Zhao Yazhen saw Pei Lu, she was only slightly dissatisfied for a second. But when she saw that she was still energetic and beautiful today, she immediately smiled, opened the door and invited her in.

" Why are you taking a taxi, kid? Are you staying in a hotel? Just tell me the address and let us pick you up. We are a family, why are you being so polite? "

Pei Lu shook her head and said nothing else. She only glanced at Pei Feng in the driver's seat and Pei Fan in the co-pilot's seat and said, " Let's go. "

Pei Feng glanced at her in the rearview mirror and started the car.

The car had been parked there just now and he was reluctant to waste fuel on turning on the heater, so now the car is finally warm.

Pei Fan looked out the window the whole time and didn't even glance at Pei Lu, probably because he wanted to out of sight and out of mind.

Zhao Yazhen held Pei Lu's hand and talked all the way, telling her about her hometown and her grandparents.

The two elders were also well-known in the village. The information Ye Ke gave her occasionally mentioned that in the past when insurance fraud was prevalent, the two elders of the Zhao family had also done such immoral things.

At that time, people were not wary of such things, and they really got a lot of money.

I can only say that this wave is caused by the top beam being crooked and the bottom beam being crooked.

Pei Lu was too tired to complain about this kind of thing. She could only follow the example of her brother Pei Fan and look out the window the whole time.

The small village was about a twenty-minute drive from Yong'an Town, and they arrived there quickly.

Zhao Yazhen's brother took his sister-in-law back to her parents' home. Now there were only the two old people and a naughty child who was not taken away by his parents.

The naughty kid was holding a candy in his hand, and when he saw Zhao Yazhen getting off the train, he reached out to her for food.

Pei Lu guessed that favoring boys over girls might have been passed down from generation to generation in this family. The family had twins, a boy and a girl, but the girl was obviously more timid, while the boy grabbed Zhao Yazhen arrogantly.

Zhao Yazhen smiled and stuffed red envelopes into the hands of her nephew and niece, but she saw Zhao Yazhen stuffing the red envelopes with her own eyes in the car, so how could she not see that the red envelopes were one big and one small?

She withdrew her gaze and quietly slipped a candy to the little girl as she walked past her.

The little girl didn't know her and was more distant to her than to the others, but she still took the candy from her hand.

But before she could laugh, she saw Pei Fan behind her, so she turned around and ran quickly with the candy and red envelope in her hand. Before Pei Lu could even react, he disappeared. She stared blankly at the little girl running back to the room at the end, glanced at Pei Fan warily, then slammed the door and never came out again.

Pei Lu turned her head to look at Pei Fan, who had just smoked a cigarette outside. Now when she got closer, she could smell the scent of low-quality tobacco. She stood a little further away from him in silence .

The two elders also knew about Pei Lu from Zhao Yazhen early in the morning. They liked Pei Lu very much when they saw her for the first time. Who doesn't like a pretty girl? But they immediately became unhappy because Pei Lu was far inferior to Pei Mengmeng .

Pei Mengmeng is so sensible, with a mouth as sweet as honey, and she can always make the two elders laugh. Pei Mengmeng would even use her own pocket money to buy pastries and snacks in the town to please the elderly.

He always politely refuses the New Year's money, but this child, on the other hand, not only doesn't say a word when he comes home, he just stands there. He was raised in a wealthy family, but he doesn't know any rules!

Zhao Yazhen naturally saw through the dissatisfaction in her parents' eyes, but she didn't want to make Pei Lu unhappy today, so she said a lot of nice things, pulled Pei Lu over and said with a smile: " She is shy, Lulu, call grandma and grandpa quickly, they have prepared red envelopes for you. "

The old lady's mouth stiffened for a moment. They didn't have any red envelopes!

They haven't prepared red envelopes for the younger generation for a long time. Besides, they are already in their twenties. Do they have the nerve to ask them for red envelopes?

But Pei Lu was indeed a person without tact. After hearing this, she turned to the two old people, smiled and stretched out her hands: " Happy New Year, grandma and grandpa, and may you make a fortune. "

" Hmm. " The old man groaned, looked at his wife, then looked at his daughter's expression, and reluctantly took out a hundred-dollar bill from his pocket. Pei Lu did not refuse at all and directly stuffed the hundred-dollar bill into her pocket in front of the two elders.

The old man, who was still waiting to get the money back, immediately started to glare. But before he could make trouble, Pei Fan at the side opened his mouth: " Grandpa, why is there only hers? Where is mine? "

There was clearly more resentment in Zhao Yazhen's expression when she looked at Pei Fan. Where do parents get the money if they don't work? They are supported by their children. These children who take the money from the elderly are actually taking their money. They have to pay back whatever they take.

It has been several years since the parents gave Pei Fan any New Year's money. This is too ignorant.

But Pei Fan didn't get the hint from his mother. He didn't have a penny on him and he needed money to buy cigarettes.

Pei Lu said to Pei Fan with a smile: " Brother, come over and wish grandma and grandpa a happy new year. I'll give you money if you do so. "

Pei Fan glanced at Pei Lu. Although that look was calm, Pei Lu could see that this vengeful guy had not forgotten what happened on the night of the 30th.

Pei Fan walked up to the two old men with a forced smile and stretched out his hand.

The old man felt bad enough giving out the 100 yuan, and now he looked at his wife and said, " You give it to me, I don't have any money. "

So the old lady had to reluctantly pay another hundred yuan.

This time, Zhao Yuepeng, who had been eating candy, was unhappy. He threw himself on his grandmother's lap and pouted, saying, " Grandma, didn't you say that this was the money for me to buy chocolate? Why are you giving it to him? "

Pei Fan would not care about such a naughty child. He took the money and put it in his pocket, then turned around and walked out.

Zhao Yuepeng is a little devil, but there is always someone better. He is obviously afraid of Pei Fan, so he could only glare at Pei Lu fiercely.

Just when Pei Lu was innocently caught in the crossfire, Zhao Yazhen stood up. The old lady of the Zhao family slapped her head and said, " The child from the Wang family is back today. Haven't you always wanted to go see him? I think now is the perfect time, while he hasn't had lunch yet. "

Zhao Yazhen said, " Yes, I think so too. Juanzi and I were classmates in elementary school, and I have watched Xiaokun grow up. I have to go and see him. Lulu, you go with your mother. "

Pei Lu took a step back and said, " I don't know their family. "

Zhao Yazhen looked at her with a frown: " You will get to know each other if you go there. Many people in the village are asking about you. My daughter is so beautiful, I must bring her out for them to see. "

So Pei Lu compromised reluctantly. Although she compromised, she was still a little distracted while playing with her phone.

Zhao Yazhen picked up the fruit she had bought early in the morning. Seeing Pei Lu not helping but still playing with her phone, she urged her, " Stop playing for now. Put your phone away and look at it when you get home. "

Pei Lu pressed the button a few more times before putting away the phone.

Zhao Yazhen wanted to chat with her, so she asked casually, " Who are you messaging? "

Pei Lu said happily: " A senior. "

Senior what? Chen Lang, with whom she had a somewhat ambiguous relationship and frequent contacts last semester, didn't talk to her even once during the seven-day winter break.

But this sentence obviously had a great impact on Zhao Yazhen. Her face stiffened for a moment, and then she remembered that she didn't know her daughter very well.

She is a college student. Nowadays, many college students are looking for partners on their own. Does this daughter already have a partner?

So she asked: " What senior? "

" He's just a senior. " Pei Lu didn't explain much to her, so Zhao Yazhen sighed and continued chatting with her.

" You young people are just impulsive. What kind of place is a university? There are kids from all over the place. You are from another place, right? You have to consider your parents when you find a partner . If you marry someone from another place in the future, we will miss you so much. It's better to stay at home and know your background well. "

Pei Lu looked distressed: " But I don't know anyone here. "

" You will be able to see people of your age soon. Your Aunt Jiang's son is about the same age as you. He is a very energetic young man. Most importantly, your Aunt Jiang's family is rich. Their conditions are much better than ours. "

Zhao Yazhen intended to say good things about Wang Kun, but Pei Lu had already met that Wang Kun, so she didn't quite know what Zhao Yazhen's " a spirited young man " meant. A spirited young man?

She was impatient to listen to Zhao Yazhen's chatter, and soon she became distracted, and what Zhao Yazhen said went in one ear and out the other.

The Chiang family.

The Jiang family was relatively quiet this morning. People who wanted to visit usually came in the afternoon, so apart from the two elders, there were only Jiang Lijuan and her husband.

The Jiang family's house has always been the largest in the village. After Grandpa Jiang's factory made money, he rebuilt the house into a grand two-story building.

Later, Jiang Lijuan invited a designer from the city to redecorate the house, making this small house look like a villa in the city.

It was a bit embarrassing that her son was bitten by a dog. Earlier, Jiang Lijuan saw someone post a recorded video and was so angry that she couldn't eat for two consecutive meals.

The big bear was too big, and it bit Wang Kun's butt twice very fiercely. After that, the big dog was given away by Jiang Lijuan. Wang Kun got an injection and lay on the bed all day, unable to even sit up.

Now that things have come to this, he just wants to stay at home, not wanting to see guests or go out, but he dare not disobey Jiang Lijuan's words.

His mother said that you can choose not to see others, but your grandparents miss you, and you have to go back with us, so Wang Kun had to lie down in another place.

Fortunately, his grandparents also loved him and prepared a lot of delicious food for him early in the morning. He just lay leisurely on the sofa, eating while flirting with his female companion on his mobile phone.

It was at this time that he heard his grandmother say to his mother: " Do you remember the child from the Zhao family? He said he would come to pay me New Year's greetings in a while. He heard that Xiao Kun was injured, so he came to see me. "

Jiang Lijuan was sitting there drinking tea. She frowned when she heard her mother's words and thought for a long time before she remembered Zhao Yazhen.

She was puzzled: " What is she doing here? "

There's nothing to connect the Zhao family with the Jiang family, right?

" Who knows? I asked her to come. I heard that her daughter is very pretty and is a student. I want to meet her. If she is really good, please tell our Xiao Kun about it. "

Wang Kun, who was playing with his mobile phone at the side, wanted to roll his eyes when he heard this. He knew that this girl was a wild girl from a poor family who wanted to marry into a rich family.

Jiang Lijuan thought for a moment and said, " I've seen their daughter. She's pretty, but she doesn't look very honest. "

He looked like a scheming person. Although he spoke sweetly, he seemed naive. The calculation in his eyes could not be hidden. She actually did not like him very much.

But she recently heard people say that the Zhao family's daughter was taken away by mistake? No one doesn't like gossip, so Jiang Lijuan immediately talked about the matter with her mother. For a while, she was not so averse to the other person coming to her house. She wanted to see whether the daughter of the Zhao family was the original one or the new one.

But Jiang Lijuan would never have imagined that before she could even eat the melons from other people's homes, she already wanted to eat the melons from her own home.

She was just changing the subject and chatting with Jiang's mother when her cell phone suddenly rang, indicating that there was an incoming message.

Zhao Lijuan subconsciously looked down and found it was an anonymous text message. Who still sends text messages these days? She thought it was an advertisement, but the homepage prompt was indeed a picture.

Zhao Lijuan clicked on the text message, but after a casual glance at it, she was stunned.

She stood up suddenly from the sofa, and her action startled both Jiang's mother and Wang Kun, who was lying on the sofa playing with his mobile phone.

" What's wrong with you? Did something happen at the factory? " Jiang's mother patted her chest and looked up at her, but Wang Kun was frightened for a moment but soon regained his composure and continued to play with his phone.

Jiang Lijuan took a deep breath, looked at her mobile phone again, and her face turned pale in an instant, and the phone fell directly to the ground.

Jiang's mother was also frightened by her behavior and wanted to bend down to help her pick up the phone from the ground, but before she picked up the phone, she saw the photos inside the phone.

In the photo, a young and beautiful woman is holding a child. There is no need for anyone to explain anything. The child's face looks exactly like Wang Dajun's. No one would doubt that they are not related by blood at just one glance.

Jiang's mother was also frightened.

Only then did Wang Kun realize that something was wrong.

He raised his eyebrows and asked, " What happened? "

As he spoke, he also looked at the phone on the ground, but in just a few seconds, Jiang Lijuan had regained her composure and quickly picked up the phone from the ground.

Her first reaction was to look at the phone number. She called back the number, but the call was not connected.

This should be a black number.

There were three words below the text message, simple and clear: check your mailbox.

The Jiang family's business has been growing in the past two years, so the secretary got Jiang Lijuan an email address. They occasionally receive small orders from foreign clients, and foreigners prefer to use email addresses when working.

Jiang Lijuan opened her email without any hesitation, and then she saw more photos. Those photos were like slaps in the face.

It made her face burn and her heart ached.

In fact, she had long discovered that Wang Dajun's heart was not with her, but she didn't care. She was in middle age, at this age, and her son was so grown up. It was no longer possible to talk about love or not. She was no longer at that age.

In real life, apart from love, there are still many things to do.

She has always been a person who has a clear distinction between love and hate. Wang Dajun is the person she chose herself, and she has no regrets about choosing him, although some time after the marriage, she discovered the true face of this man.

The other party is just a good-looking guy, he is not the kind of good husband who will love her deeply, but they have feelings for each other.

So Jiang Lijuan thought, as long as they lived like this, their lives would be over. Isn't life just so plain?

She thought Wang Dajun was just lazy and greedy, but she never expected that the man actually ...

Jiang Lijuan was shaking with anger. As she looked at the photos one by one, Wang Kun, who was slow to realize something was wrong, had already started knocking on the door.

" Mom, what's going on? Open the door! "

Seeing that Jiang Lijuan remained silent, Wang Kun became a little anxious. He subconsciously wanted to kick the door, but when he took a step back, the cut on the back of his butt was pulled, and he grimaced in pain.

Fortunately, Jiang's mother brought the spare key to the room and opened the door.

But before the two men could say anything, Wang Dajun's voice was heard from outside.

" Wife, we have guests! "

As soon as Wang Dajun came back, he went to see his old friend. His old friend had a son in his old age. He didn't have time before, so he went over and gave the child a big red envelope. As soon as he came back, he met Zhao Yazhen and Pei Lu at the door.

Wang Dajun had known that Zhao Yazhen's daughter was beautiful, but he was still surprised by the girl's face when he saw her. He had seen a lot of good-looking people, and now everyone has a mobile phone, and there are so many good-looking internet celebrities, enough to make people dazzled.

But what can I say? This little girl is not only beautiful, but also has a kind of spirituality that ordinary people do not have. Wang Dajun feels that if his son sees this little girl, he will definitely like her.

He originally looked down on this family, and when he heard that Pei Feng wanted to find him a job, he didn't take it seriously.

But after seeing Pei Lu today, he felt that he could indeed consider this matter.

But just as Wang Dajun was smiling, he saw his wife coming out of the room with a stern face.

Wang Dajun was confused: " What happened? "

In the past two years, the couple's status has become increasingly obvious. Jiang Lijuan has become more and more powerful with the success of her career. Wang Dajun has achieved his current status entirely thanks to his wife, so he will not easily go against Jiang Lijuan.

Jiang Lijuan stood there with a gloomy face, and asked directly without paying attention to the outsiders around: " Wang Dajun, who is Chunyan? "

Wang Dajun was stunned for a moment, then his face changed. He strode forward and whispered to Jiang Lijuan: " There are outsiders here now, let's go back to the house and talk. "

" What are you going to say when you get back to your room? Only someone with a guilty conscience would be afraid to stand in the sun. If you can walk and sit upright, why would you be afraid of others? "

Jiang Lijuan's voice was very loud, and the people at the door and those passing by heard it.

Jiang Lijuan has always been like this, impetuous and daring to love and hate. If she weren't like this, she wouldn't have taken the initiative to pursue Wang Dajun back then.

Wang Dajun's face turned ugly in an instant, and cold sweat broke out in an instant.

Pei Lu was standing behind Zhao Yazhen when her cell phone vibrated.

Si Ting asked her if she wanted to answer it.

Pei Lu thought for a while and replied: No need, I'm just eating melon.

It would be nice if I had a handful of melon seeds. Why didn't I put a handful in my pocket when I left home just now?

## Chapter 19

Wang Dajun wanted to explain himself again , but for a moment, he almost accepted his fate.

He occasionally thought about what would happen if Jiang Lijuan found out about his affairs , and he felt that Jiang Lijuan would definitely divorce him.



But the more this happened , the more suffocated he felt. He felt that he was under too much pressure as a man . It was bad enough that people outside said he was incompetent and had to rely on his wife , but Jiang Lijuan was now becoming more and more bossy to him.

Wang Dajun felt that he could only regain his dignity as a man with Chunyan. He had some male chauvinism in his bones, and after being suppressed for a long time , he wanted to find an outlet to vent , and Chunyan was that outlet.

She was a woman who depended on him wholeheartedly and admired him wholeheartedly . He could find the long-lost confidence in Chunyan.

But the more this happened , the more guilty he felt, and he couldn't stop feeling guilty because they still had a child, a child who looked more like his own.

With this fluke mentality, Wang Dajun spent one, two, three years ...

The child is so big now , but Jiang Lijuan still hasn't noticed it.

Her business grew bigger and bigger, she made more and more money, and became busier and busier.

when Jiang Lijuan talked to him about moving to a new development zone in the neighboring city because of the business they were doing . There would be policy support there and they would be able to develop better.

Wang Dajun is not a scheming person , and he had long since let go of his few remaining guard.

But at this moment , he was discovered.

How did you find out?

Wang Dajun would never understand it until his death.

Liu Chunyan lives in such a remote area and rarely goes out. There are hardly any acquaintances in that area, let alone acquaintances. How did she get discovered?

If Jiang Lijuan had already believed it to 80% after seeing the photos, now seeing her husband's guilty and confused expression, what else could she not understand?

She sneered, ignoring her mother who was whispering to dissuade her from behind and her son who looked confused.

He only glanced coldly at Zhao Yazhen, who was standing awkwardly with her things in her hands, and at the villagers who were passing by the door and looking around, and raised his voice and asked:

" There are so many people watching us, and they are all people we know. Just tell us what you have to say. If you don't do bad things in your daily life, you won't be afraid of ghosts knocking on your door in the middle of the night. Everyone can be a witness, right? "

The more Jiang Lijuan looked at Wang Dajun's expression, the colder she felt. She was now overwhelmed by anger and wanted to spread this scandal.

She had indeed discovered that there was no love left between them, but wasn't that the case for most middle-aged couples?

But the other party was wrong in betraying their marriage.

Over the years, she has thought about leaving this useless man. She is so outstanding that she has gradually met many outstanding people, and it's not that no one has expressed his love to her.

Although Jiang Lijuan is a bold and thoughtful person, her bottom line when it comes to marriage and love is relatively conservative. This is her husband who has been with her all the way, and he also has many advantages.

There were indeed many disappointing moments, but she always thought that they had been through all the ups and downs together for so many years, and her son was already so big, so why bother making trouble? A little tolerance is always required in the relationship between husband and wife.

But this situation went on for so long that she didn't even realize that she had begun to make excuses for the other party.

She always thought that Wang Dajun was her husband. Although he had his faults, he still loved her after all. There would always be a moment in her ordinary life when his thoughtfulness would prove that they still loved each other.

But today, standing under such a clear sky, she suddenly realized her own stupidity.

She considered herself a strong woman, and everyone outside, including herself, believed that she was the invincible one between her and her husband.

But when she humbly tried to find evidence of happiness from those disappointing details again and again, she had already lost. She had begun to make excuses for this man without even realizing it.

How ridiculous.

Jiang Lijuan felt her body getting stiff and cold, but there seemed to be a fire in her heart that began to slowly burn, burning her heart that had long been calloused by life.

Seeing Jiang Lijuan like this, Wang Dajun finally got a little anxious: " Don't be like this, I'll explain it to you slowly, can't we talk about it slowly? "

" No need to talk slowly, I just want to ask you one question, is this woman your lover outside, and is this child your son! "

" Pah! "

Zhao Yazhen's fruit fell to the ground and rolled all over the floor.

She stood there in amazement at the Jiang family in the yard, so shocked that she forgot to leave.

Pei Lu was also a little surprised. She just wanted to cause a little trouble for the Jiang family. It didn't matter whether Jiang Lijuan solved it behind closed doors or in any other way. In this way, Wang Kun, who had been bitten on the butt, would definitely not come to harass her.

In fact, she was just joking when she told Si Ting that she wanted to eat melons. After all, most people still think that family disgrace should not be made public. Anyway, as long as she doesn't cause trouble for her, this will be her thank you gift to Aunt Jiang.

No matter what kind of woman she is, she would not be willing to live in lies.

Wang Dajun also started to tremble. His mother-in-law finally reacted at this time and whispered to her daughter to go into the house first.

Wang Dajun was about to hug Jiang Lijuan and push her inside when his father-in-law came back.

Jiang Qingshan saw a group of people gathered at the door of his house from a distance. He was wondering what they were doing at the door of his house. As he got closer, he heard a quarrel, which was from his daughter.

" Wang Dajun, don't touch me. I won't go into the house with you. Mom, don't pull me. Anyway, I'm not afraid of being embarrassed. I'm not the one who cheated on my partner. I'm not the one who raised a child with someone else. I'm upright and I have nothing to be afraid of! "

The old man was startled and walked in quickly: " What's going on? "

The old man was a soldier when he was young. After retiring from the army, he never gave up the habit of exercising. Even when he is old, his body is still strong and he walks with great vigor. His powerful roar attracted the attention of the Jiang family, and Jiang's mother suddenly felt relieved: " Her father, you are back. Look at them. The couple is arguing! "

When Jiang's mother ran downstairs, she found that so many people had gathered in front of their house, so she simply walked over and closed the door.

Zhao Yazhen couldn't go out of other people's yard at this moment, so she was locked out with a dry laugh. But this was a yard after all, so what's the point of closing the gate? Even with the gate closed, the quarrel inside still inevitably came out.

The group of onlookers not only did not leave, but even stuck to the door and the corners and started listening.

Jiang Qingshan asked: " What on earth is going on? "

Jiang Lijuan answered loudly: " Wang Dajun has a mistress outside and has a son with her! "

Wang Kun was groaning over there, " Don't be angry, Mom. Maybe someone is framing my dad. "

Jiang Lijuan scolded him: " You useless thing, you eat my food and drink my drinks, and now you are still turning your elbows outward. If you feel sorry for your father, you can go with him. You can also go to see your future mother together! "

Jiang Lijuan was getting more and more angry, and she got even angrier when others tried to persuade her and speak well of Wang Dajun.

Sure enough, after hearing this, Wang Kun decisively shut up.

But he is unsure and scared now. He certainly doesn't want his parents' relationship to break down, but to be honest, he favors his father in his heart.

Because his mother is busy with her business and has a strong personality, she is very strict with him. But his father is different. Only men understand men, so his father always spoils him.

But he also knew in his heart that the family's financial power was in his mother's hands. If Jiang Lijuan stopped giving him money, he would not be able to show off his power outside.

Wang Kun, who was undecided, remained silent.

Jiang Qingshan finally figured out the whole story from their conversation. Jiang Lijuan's personality was like Jiang Qingshan's, and Jiang Qingshan's temper was even tougher than Jiang Lijuan's, so the sound of Wang Dajun screaming in pain after being beaten was immediately heard in the yard.

For a moment, the anxious voices of Wang Kun and Jiang's mother trying to stop them, Jiang Qingshan's scolding, and Wang Dajun's roaring were all mixed together, and the Jiang family's yard was really lively.

When Wang Dajun was running away, he stepped on the apples that Zhao Yazhen had scattered in the yard and fell directly to the ground. The stone knocked out his front teeth. When Jiang Qingshan raised his stick and was about to walk over, he saw Wang Dajun, who had fallen, suddenly turned around with blood all over his face and blood still flowing from his mouth. The old man who was about to hit someone was frightened and dropped the stick in his hand. He was helped by Jiang Lijuan and did not fall to the ground.

The farce of the Jiang family this morning ended with Wang Dajun losing a front tooth. The villagers who were eating melons through the door then dispersed with a lingering feeling. Zhao Yazhen was also a person who loved to watch the fun, and she was also still not satisfied. But after that, she slapped her head and remembered that she had not finished her business for the day!

Zhao Yazhen was anxious and angry. She turned to look at Pei Lu, then turned back to look at the tightly closed door, and felt that this matter might be ruined.

Originally Pei Feng was counting on Wang Dajun. But now Wang Dajun can hardly protect himself, so how can he have time to take care of them?

Zhao Yazhen immediately lost the mood to care about other people's excitement and walked back with Pei Lu.

On the way, I also met Pei Fan, who was smoking a cigarette and planning to go out for a drink with some friends.

Pei Fan was sitting in the passenger seat of a car. Zhao Yazhen spotted him with her sharp eyes and stepped forward to stop the car.

Seeing that they were heading to the village entrance, he asked, "Where are you going? It's almost time for dinner."

"No, go to town with them to eat, and go home directly in the evening. Don't worry about me."

Pei Lu stood far away, annoyed by the strong smell of cigarettes on Pei Fan.

Pei Fan just received another debt collection call. The people on the other end were not easy to deal with, so he was also anxious and concerned about the Wang family's affairs. He had endured this matter for so long!

So he asked: "Have you been to the Jiang family?"

"I went, but the Jiang family has something to do today."

Pei Fan suddenly became anxious: "What do you mean by something is wrong?"

"It's hard to explain it in a few words," Zhao Yazhen was now anxious to go back to Pei Feng to discuss countermeasures, "You go home, let's discuss this together ..."

There was something she had wanted to say for a long time. Pei Fan was already an adult, with hands and feet, and he was still in his prime. It shouldn't be difficult for him to find a job outside. Pei Fan hasn't worked for a long time, and his family can barely make ends meet, so she wants Pei Fan to go out to work as well.

At least you have to save some money for your wife!

But Pei Fan became even more annoyed when he heard her words. He waved his hands and was so annoyed that he just wanted to drink. He ignored Zhao Yazhen calling him from behind, rolled up the window and let his friend drive away.

" Is that your sister? She's prettier than Pei Mengmeng! " The driver, smoking a cigarette, teased as the car drove away for a long distance , and the two people behind him followed suit. They have all been together since childhood and are all of the same character. Pei Fan can tell what they are thinking at a glance.

But Pei Fan was annoyed with Pei Lu, so he didn't say anything.

" Call him out for a drink when you're free, " the driver said again, " Why didn't you tell me that your dad was looking for a job? I'll ask around for you. "

This man's family also has some money, a little less than the Jiang family, but more than enough than the Pei family.

When Pei Fan heard this, his eyes lit up.

Pei Lu and Zhao Yazhen went back to Zhao's house, had a meal, and returned to Yong'an Town in the evening.

Pei Lu stopped the car at the gate of the community and was about to leave.

Zhao Yazhen stopped her and asked: " Where are you going? It's not safe at night. Don't run around. "

Pei Lu said: " Working, I have a part-time job in a restaurant. "

" Working? " Now it was Zhao Yazhen's turn to be surprised.

But what she said made sense.

To be honest, Pei Lu ran away that day, and Zhao Yazhen once suspected that she took money when she left that rich family.

But when she heard her say this, her doubts seemed to have found their root.

" Yes, " Pei Lu looked back at her with some melancholy in her eyes. It was the first time she called Zhao Yazhen "mom," but Zhao Yazhen was not happy at all.

Because she said: " Mom, school is about to start, and I still don't have the money for my 8,000 yuan tuition. I'm just a poor student, and I can't go to school without someone paying for my tuition. Can you help me pay the money? "

Zhao Yazhen: "..."

Hearing this number, Zhao Yazhen subconsciously took a step back.

University tuition is paid annually. Pei Lu's next school term is the second semester of her junior year, so she actually doesn't have to pay tuition yet.

But Pei Lu just looked at Zhao Yazhen with a smile, like a child expecting motherly love.

But in Zhao Yazhen's eyes, her smile was clearly a ghost that was taking her life.

No, it's for money.

Zhao Yazhen was frightened all of a sudden, stepped back and laughed dryly, forgetting to ask where she was going to work, nor what kind of work she was going to do, she just said: " Then go ahead ..."

So Pei Lu turned and left.

Walking into the afterglow of sunset, the red sunset cast a veil over her, isolating her figure from the world she had never integrated into.

Si Ting and Li Yequ took a car back to Xing City and went directly to Mr. Li's hospital. Mr. Li suddenly woke up early this morning, but no one knew about it except Secretary Gao. Even Li Yequ didn't know about it until he arrived at the hospital. Li Yequ initially thought that he must not tell anyone about what happened between him and Li Zhiqiu so as not to irritate the old man, but what kind of person is Mr. Li? His own grandson knows it himself. Besides, Secretary Gao is loyal to him. He is not Li Yequ's man. He is only responsible to his only boss.

So as soon as Mr. Li woke up, Secretary Gao reported the matter. In fact, Secretary Gao was also afraid of upsetting their old man, but he was very loyal. He not only understood the old man's character, but also knew his own responsibilities. In order to avoid upsetting the other party, he kept this matter secret. It had happened once before Li Zhiqiu's accident, and it must not happen again. Mr. Li had already suffered a shock once. Before the accident, he had been observing Li Zhiqiu carefully and knew about the changes in his mentality. But after all, he was his own grandson, so he still had a glimmer of hope in his heart. However, Li Zhiqiu's push destroyed the last bit of their family affection, and he gave up. Secretary Gao was also very skillful in his words. He did tell the truth, but he deliberately concealed the process of the two brothers killing each other. He only said that Li Yequ was fine now and had been rescued by someone.

When Li Yequ rushed into the ward, for the first time he did not rush over and call grandpa like a willful child. He just stood there, staring blankly at this kind old man.

Because Secretary Gao had just told him at the hospital gate that the old man's current good condition was all an illusion.

He had been in poor health to begin with, and had been exhausted recently. The fall had seriously damaged his health. Strictly speaking, his current good condition was just a flash in the pan, as his organs were still failing at an accelerated rate.

Li Yequ was very upset, but he couldn't make a fuss or cry. His grandfather loved him, and if he saw him still looking so weak and helpless, he would not be able to close his eyes in peace. The ward was left to the grandparents. Secretary Gao politely invited Si Ting out for tea and thanked him for saving the young master of the Li family.

" This is a thank-you gift from our old man. Please accept it, Mr. Si. "

Si Ting glanced at Secretary Gao and felt that Mr. Li was very thoughtful.

They must have been investigating themselves. After all, the person who could bring Li Yequ back from abroad quietly must not be an ordinary person. But they probably didn't find anything. Si Ting felt that the humans in this world were more suspicious than those in their world, but this had become his advantage. Their suspicion meant that they were fearful, and the game between people was a series of psychological games.

In fact, he guessed right. When Secretary Gao saw the blank background, he may have been more fearful or he may have been respectful to his benefactor, so he stopped and told the old man everything truthfully.

No matter who Mr. Si is or whether he thinks highly of their thank-you gift, they have to give it out.

Secretary Gao pushed several contracts to Si Ting. Si Ting had long guessed that Young Master Li's life was valuable, but he did not expect that the Li family would be so generous. He picked up a few contracts and looked at them. There was no unnecessary expression on his face. He did not show any surprise at receiving such a gift, nor did he show any disdain for these properties.

Secretary Gao is middle-aged now. He has been through many ups and downs with Mr. Li. He boasts that he has seen countless people and met all kinds of important people.

But when I was waiting quietly on the other side, I realized belatedly that I was nervous.

His heart was filled with waves of shock, but he did not dare to break the silence. He could only wait for Si Ting to finish reading those things.

While waiting, he drank coffee and secretly observed the other person. When he finished his cup of coffee, the other person finally looked up. He took out a piece of paper from a stack of documents, signed his name, and pushed the rest of the pile back to Secretary Gao.

Secretary Gao glanced at the reward that he pushed to him and almost thought that the other party was the saint in the fable who only took one silver coin from a pile of gold.

Or is it that the big boss in front of him doesn't really care about the Li family's money?

Judging from the other person's dress and behavior, it's obviously the latter.

Si Ting picked out an antique painting and an antique jewel brooch.

It's the old man's private collection.

Compared with the life of the young master of the Li family, these two things are not worth mentioning.

But the other party had made his choice, and Secretary Gao pushed his glasses on the bridge of his nose.

After signing, the other party put the thing aside and started drinking coffee, as if what he had just read was just a flyer picked up from the street.

What else can he say?

He could only wait for the other party to finish his coffee leisurely before saying, " Mr. Si, do you want to go with me to complete the formalities now? "

The brooch was nothing special, but the painting was extremely important and could not be taken away directly.

" No hurry, wait for me to contact you. "

After hearing this, Secretary Gao looked at him more cautiously.

Boss, you really don't care!

" Then please come back with me, Mr. Si. Our old man also wants to see you. "

Even Li Yeqiu didn't know what Si Ting talked about with the old man. One minute after he came out, Li Yeqiu went in again and cried heart-wrenchingly.

Before his death, the old man did not leave any evidence that Li Zhiqu had overthrown him. He even changed his will and donated part of the property he had intended to leave to his grandson. Because he wanted his grandson, who had never lived up to his expectations, to take control of the Li family with his own abilities.

If he fails, this trip to the gates of hell will be in vain, and the winner will be the king or the loser will be the bandit.

Li Yeqiu cried so much that she fainted.

That afternoon, Li Zhiqu also rushed to the hospital.

At this time, Secretary Gao brought the brooch and arranged a car to take away their distinguished guest. Li Zhiqu, who arrived late, did not see Si Ting leaving in the car.

As soon as Pei Lu opened the door, her phone prompted another transfer message.

When she looked up, she saw the man sitting in the living room watching TV, a financial channel that she would never normally watch.

"Why are you transferring money to me?" Pei Lu was very surprised.

This money was given by her.

Si Ting picked up the water cup and said, "Someone told me that we should give lucky money during the Chinese New Year."

Pei Lu was delighted at once, and she readily accepted the transfer of 10,000 yuan.

She ran over and said, "But red envelopes are given by elders to younger people, and you are about the same age as me..."

She fell silent after saying this, and she suddenly realized that the other person was a monster. Just like the female star, you couldn't tell his age!

Pei Lu asked curiously, "How old are you?"

The man said casually: "Forgot."

This is why I don't want to say it.

Pei Lu puffed up her cheeks and was about to ask more questions when she saw a small velvet box on the table.

Seeing her gaze fixed there, Si Ting pushed the small box in front of her, "I got it back from the Li family."

Pei Lu opened the box and saw a pink gem brooch. The pink color and the delicately cut gem formed a flower, which was very girly.

Pei Lu knew that the other party and Li Yequ would not return empty-handed, because she had heard more than once that Mr. Li was a very loyal person who would repay any small favor, let alone something as big as saving a life.

"Is this for me?" She blinked and looked at the man.

"Yes, a New Year's gift."

Pei Lu felt that she was complete.

In the first year after leaving the home where she had lived for more than 20 years, she not only received bulging red envelopes, but also received beautiful New Year gifts.

So she said to Si Ting excitedly: "Let's go out for dinner tonight."

"Where to?"

Pei Lu really wanted to go out for dinner at first, so she continued her restaurant exploration activities. In a couple of days, she planned to bury herself in her bedroom and concentrate on her creation, and she had to finish it before Ye Ke came back from abroad.

But when the words came to her lips, she thought of Pei Fan again. The way his friends looked at people was particularly uncomfortable, and she didn't think Zhao Yazhen would give up so easily.

Pei Lu gritted her teeth and thought, why not just do it once and for all, it would be better to resolve the matter as soon as possible.



So she changed the subject and said, " Why don't you come with me to do something? "

Si Ting looked at her.

Pei Lu pressed the phone and called Pei Fan's creditor.

Leslie is the most lively bar in Yong'an Town. It is located on the basement floor of a large bathing center. It does not close during the Spring Festival and is most lively at night.

The cost here is quite high, with bathing and self-service costing 799 per person. For people like Pei Fan, it's a good place to show off and pick up girls.

Fang Jiaxu was the driver who drove a group of people out of the village in the morning. After seeing Pei Lu, the aftereffects were much greater than he had imagined. He felt itchy all day and couldn't do anything well.

Pei Fan knew that he could make money from this friend, so he had been observing him carefully. Seeing that he was distracted, just like a man, how could he not understand what was going on?

So he became even more proud, but the more proud he was, the more pretentious he became, waiting for Fang Jiaxu to ask him about it.

Sure enough, Fang Jiaxu asked: " How long has your sister been back? "

" Just these few days. " Few people didn't know about the Pei family's daughter.

" The little girl must have no friends since she just came back. As her brother, why don't you take her out more often? Why do you stay in the house all day long? "

Pei Fan snorted and said, " Stuck in the house? "

She is very capable and goes out every few days.

Pei Fan himself never had anything to do when he went out, so he didn't think there was anything good about Pei Lu running out.

Fang Jiaxu heard him say this and urged: " What can she do by herself? Bring her out to drink with us. "

" You really like her? " Pei Fan glanced at him, " My mother plans to introduce her to Wang Kun. "

" Wang Kun? " Fang Jiaxu's face immediately turned ugly.

The Fang family has made some money from business in recent years and is very prosperous in the village, but it is indeed inferior to the Wang family. It is precisely because of this that he and Wang Kun are not on good terms.

Because of Pei Fan's words, Fang Jiaxu's feelings towards Pei Lu increased from 80% to 100%. He said unhappily: " We should keep the best things to ourselves. Of course, we two are the best. Wang Kun is nothing. I'll treat you to a drink later. My friend is organizing a party tonight at the bar downstairs. There are several pretty girls there. "

Pei Fan achieved his goal and felt relieved immediately. He thought that this cheap sister was quite useful.

Pei Lu and Si Ting had a buffet on the third floor. The buffet here was really good, the seafood was very fresh, and there were a few wines that they picked that were also to their liking.

Pei Lu's alcohol tolerance was average, so she only took a small sip. She kept Si Ting in a secret corner, watching Pei Fan and his group from afar. Then she told Si Ting, " See ? The one in blue clothes, the most wretched one is my brother. "

Si Ting heard the word " brother " , his brows slightly frowned, and a dark light surged in the depths of his black pupils as he looked at Pei Fan's back.

Pei Fan, who was drinking in the distance , suddenly shuddered and felt a chill on his back, as if a cold and sticky reptile was crawling up along his spine, ready to crawl all the way to his neck, then open its poisonous fangs and bite him hard.

Pei Fan's hand shook, and the wine in his hand spilled directly onto his pants.

Fang Jiaxu had drunk a little too much, and when he saw this, he laughed and said, " Are you having a seizure? Like you peed your pants? "

This caused everyone around to burst into laughter.

Pei Fan's face was so embarrassed that it turned blue and purple, but he could only sit at the table and continue eating awkwardly.

Because he had no money and had to hide from his creditors, he hadn't had such a sumptuous meal in a long time. Not to mention his mother's cooking skills, few people could stand it.

In fact, the New Year's Eve meal was quite delicious, but he was in a bad mood at the time and was only concerned with finding faults, and as a result, he saw everything.

So eating is more important.

Seeing him like this, Fang Jiaxu looked down on him. He heard that this kid was tricked into a shady place in Xing City a while ago and lost more than 200,000 yuan. He was really a hopeless piece of mud.

Pei Lu was biting a piece of prawn and watching the group of people walking towards the entrance of the bar from afar . She quickly stood up and pulled Si Ting to follow them.

Si Ting was held by her hand and walked through the crowd into an entrance. The sound of eardrum-shattering music entered his ears, making him frown again.

The heating here was also very sufficient, but because of the sufficient heating and the many people dancing closely, when he stood at the door, he could even smell the strong smell of human flesh accompanied by cigarettes and alcohol.

As soon as Pei Lu rushed in, she was dazzled by the flickering lights. There were so many people here that when she was distracted, the group of people disappeared.

Pei Lu looked up, a little confused.

At this time, the broad shoulder that blocked the crowd behind her moved closer, and the two of them pressed their bodies against each other in such dimness. Pei Lu's heart suddenly rose to her throat.

The other person's slightly cool body temperature was transmitted to her, making her feel less nervous instantly.

Si Ting held her shoulders and turned her in one direction. Pei Lu saw Fang Jiaxu's shadow again through the moving crowd.

She hugged Si Ting's arm tightly, and the two of them separated, then walked in that direction. Si Ting glanced at her, then pulled his arm out of her hand and put his arm around her slender waist.

The moment the hand touched her waist, Pei Lu's body felt like it was electrocuted.

She looked up at the man and found that he was also looking at her. The dark purple light flashed across his face, and his expression became a little more unclear. His chest was pressed

against her back, and she could even feel his rising and falling breathing in this chaotic and noisy place ...

But she couldn't hear the movement of the other person's heart. He was very calm, unlike herself, who was a little nervous and couldn't control her heartbeat.

The moment their eyes met, Pei Lu turned her head and walked towards the platform where Fang Jiaxu and the others were standing.

This time, Si Ting blocked more people who were trying to squeeze in for her.

Pei Lu sat behind them. The group was rolling dice and it was a mess. The backrests were full of people and no one would notice her close proximity.

She ordered a bottle of wine, paid for it, sent the waiter away, and then began texting the group on her phone again.

Si Ting knew who she was texting, she was texting Pei Fan's creditor.

In fact, Pei Fan's account was due yesterday, and the interest started to be calculated today.

Pei Lu was also like a pillow when she was sleepy. The reason why Pei Fan was anxious and not anxious was because the address he left for those people before was fake, and he didn't answer the phone.

He felt that he could delay it. The reason he lost money last time was because he was too honest. So this time he was being cunning. Anyway, this thing couldn't be made public and they couldn't call the police.

If this delay can help me raise some money, that would be great.

But he probably would never have thought that while he was still trying to buy time, Pei Lu had already broken into his back door.

The group had arrived at Yong'an Town at this time, and it would take about twenty minutes to get from the town entrance to Leslie.

The waiter brought them some wine, and Pei Lu poured a glass for Si Ting: " It doesn't smell very good, it's all empty stuff, but at least you've spent money, so drink it. "

She had just seen from above that this fish seemed to have a good alcohol tolerance. When she was eating upstairs, she gave Si Ting the same drink as herself. Her face was a little hot, but the other party remained calm.

Si Ting took the wine that Pei Lu poured for him. The dark wine swayed gently in the square-mouthed crystal glass, with a faint aroma. He tilted his head back, took a sip, and then put the glass back on the table.

Pei Lu held up her chin and watched him drink. Even drinking seemed to be done with dignity, and no matter how much wine she drank, her expression remained unchanged. If it weren't for the dim light in this place, there would definitely be a girl coming to chat with him.

the noise , Si Ting asked her: " You bring those people here, then what? "

Pei Lu couldn't hear him, so she simply stood up from the opposite side and walked around to his side. Then she leaned close to him and asked loudly: " What did you say? "

Si Ting repeated the other party's words again.

Although there was still noise all around, Pei Lu could hear it clearly this time.

She said: " Of course, to tell them not to come to me. "

The one they were referring to was naturally the Pei family.

Their good son Pei Fan got into such a big trouble, so how could they have time to mess with her?

Of course she had thought that if the family couldn't come up with that much money, they would target her again. She knew that she might not be able to get away with it so easily.

She already had a few ideas, but they all needed some time to process.

After all, she was just a young lady and had never dealt with such a complicated matter as the New Year on her own. These days she has been crossing the river step by step by feeling the stones. She believes that she can solve it, but she needs time.

This matter could buy her some time, since the couple had no idea where she was working anyway.

Pei Lu expressed her thoughts, and the man looked at her and suddenly said, " Today is a good opportunity. "

Pei Lu asked: " What good opportunity? "

Over there, Fang Jiaxu was trying to get Pei Fan drunk, but Pei Fan couldn't speak clearly at this moment.

So he took the opportunity to tease her and said, " Pei Fan, you drank so much, how are you going to get home tonight? Give your family a call. "

Pei Fan still had some consciousness in his mind. He slumped there and waved his hands repeatedly, saying, " If I don't fight, they'll start nagging me again. "

Fang Jiaxu rolled his eyes and smiled in an extremely sinister way: " Call your sister and ask her to keep it a secret and come pick you up quietly. "

Pei Fan had just boasted a lot, saying that he had a sister who was as beautiful as a flower.

With Fang Jiaxu's testimony, everyone's curiosity had been piqued. After hearing what Fang Jiaxu said, everyone started to make a noise.

These people usually behave unruly when they get together, so they naturally would not miss such an opportunity and all started knocking their cups and making a noise.

Pei Fan was a little overwhelmed by this group of people and took out his mobile phone proudly.

Amid the booing, a scarlet light from a lamp passed across his face, causing him to squint his eyes. He searched through his address book before he remembered.

Where did I get Pei Lu's phone number?

Pei Fan looked at the group of people around him who had started drinking again, and felt a little embarrassed.

It would be so embarrassing if he couldn't call Pei Lu today. It's so rare that so many people praise him.

Just when Pei Fan was about to call Zhao Yazhen to ask for Pei Lu's contact information, the group of people suddenly became quiet.

Pei Fan felt something was wrong and subconsciously looked up following the group of people's gaze.

Then, his face turned pale in an instant.

The leading man in black had a scar on his face and smiled wickedly. Although he did not have a strong physique, he was obviously a martial artist.

Pei Fan had seen how powerful the other party was. He had seen the cruel means they used to deal with those who couldn't pay back the money. He thought these people wouldn't come to him so soon, but they just stood there.

For a moment, he thought it was a dream.

But when the thin man saw that his eyes were hazy, he began to lose focus. He pulled a smile on his lips, snatched the glass from the person next to him, and poured all the remaining wine in the glass on Pei Fan's head.

Pei Fan started coughing violently, and Fang Jiaxu also realized what was happening. He asked cautiously, "Big brother, what do you want to talk to him about?"

He also had some insight and knew at first glance that this group of people came with bad intentions.

"He owed money and cheated us."

Could it be that Fang Jiaxu couldn't guess what was going on?

He immediately gave up his seat with a dry laugh: "Big brothers, you guys can chat slowly, my friends are all here, look ..."

The thin man looked around and felt that this was not a good place to cause trouble, so he signaled to the two people behind him, and the two people pulled Pei Fan up.

Pei Fan had already started to tremble, and was almost sober. At this moment, he had only one thought: he must not be taken away by these two people, otherwise he would be in trouble.

If a commotion breaks out here, maybe he can take advantage of the chaos to escape.

Pei Fan began to struggle vigorously. When the thin man saw that he was not cooperating, his expression changed. He lowered his voice and said in Pei Fan's ear in a sinister tone:

"You are such a good kid, you dare to lie to us."

You know, my brother had a car accident on the way to find you yesterday, so you owed more than 200,000 yuan, plus the loss of our car and medical expenses. How can you prepare 300,000 yuan to pay it back?"

"This ... this can't be blamed on me. I didn't lie to you. How can this be blamed on me ..."

Pei Fan began to tremble, but he still clung to the sofa and refused to move.

Seeing that the situation was not right, most of the people at the table slipped away. Fang Jiaxu also wanted to leave, but he was the one who brought this person here, and if something happened, he might be blackmailed by Zhao Yazhen, so he felt that he still had to get to the bottom of this matter.

So Fang Jiaxu wanted to persuade him, but before he could do so, he was pushed away by the people who surrounded him and wanted to drag Pei Fan away.

Fang Jiaxu stumbled back suddenly and fell into a group of young men and women passing by. Then, in the darkness, someone punched him in the stomach, which almost dislocated all his internal organs.

Fang Jiaxu swore that he felt a fishy taste in his throat, it was blood.

Then his head began to feel dizzy. The lights above his head spun and blurred in front of his eyes. His legs went weak, his eyes rolled back, and he was about to faint.

As a result, when he fell down, the back of his head hit the marble table behind him, and he was woken up by the pain.

the noise , Fang Jiaxu cried out in pain and lay on the ground, stepped on by a sturdy man who was retreating.

" What took you so long? "

Pei Lu looked unhappily at the man walking towards her with a bottle of wine.

There was still a polite curve at the corner of Si Ting's lips. He handed the bottle in his hand to Pei Lu. The moment he sat down sideways, he glanced at the man who was curled up like an ugly shrimp on the ground, and then looked at Pei Lu.

He has very good hearing and could hear what these people were discussing just now.

He could hear it, but Pei Lu couldn't, as she was studying the bottle that the other party handed over.

The bottle was longer and had thinner glass than the one she had just ordered.

She looked uncertainly at the bottle in her hand, then at the people who were already fighting over there, and whispered: " Is it okay? I've never been in a fight before. "

" Don't be afraid. "

The man held her arm from behind and led her to draw a long arc in the air with the bottle. He told her the angle and strength, and pointed out the blind spots of the surveillance camera.

Pei Lu always thought that Si Ting was a gentleman, but the advice he gave her today didn't seem to be a gentleman at all.

" Then I'll do it. "

Pei Lu took a deep breath.

" Go ahead, " the man still held her arm and looked at her fair face from the side. There was a little patience and expectation in his eyes.

It was as if he was in a garden, and in the garden there was a special little rose, which, under his patient cultivation, was opening its beautiful, lovely yet poisonous thorns.

noisy surroundings, the male voice was so clear next to Pei Lu's ear.

Si Ting said to her: " Remember to turn around and run to me. I will catch you and take you away. "

## Chapter 20

Pei Lu took another deep breath , gritted her teeth, and rushed into the crowd of people fighting. Just as the thin man was about to throw a punch, a pretty girl suddenly jumped out from the side. Even in this place with flashing lights , the other person's beautiful eyes and eyebrows sparkled like clear crystal.

She had a clean temperament , which was out of place for a place like this, but she was clean without being fragile . She stood in front of Pei Fan without any hesitation , and the firm light in her eyes was unusually bright facing the flickering lights.

" Little girl, where are you from? Go away . I don't have time to joke with you here. "

The thin man looked her up and down , with an intriguing light in his eyes.

" He is my brother , you can't hit him! "

" He owes money , you have to pay it back, understand? How about you, his sister, help him pay off the debt? "

The thin man became more and more unreliable as he spoke, and he reached out to touch her face with a smile.

Skinny didn't expect that a coward like Pei Fan actually had such a beautiful sister. He thought that his girlfriend would definitely like her very much.

But at this moment , the girl moved.

Just now their attention was on each other's faces, and they didn't notice that she had a bottle of wine in her hand.

Or maybe even if they saw it, no one took it seriously. Who could believe that such a little girl who spoke in a delicate voice would pick up a bottle with the intention of hitting someone?

But she swung it anyway and threw the wine bottle at the thin man.

There was blood on the opponent's face, but she controlled the strength very well and did not forget the teacher's instructions at all , so this injury was not fatal to the thin girl who often fought outside.

But he still felt dizzy for a moment , the red blood blurred his vision, and the spicy wine made his wounds hurt like they were being torn apart.

This alarmed everyone around, and Pei Fan ran into the manager and security guard who came over after hearing the news before he could even take two steps back.

Pei Lu froze for a moment, then began to look for the breakthrough point that she had just discussed with Si Ting. She closed her eyes and took a step forward when the thin man was confused and the people around him reached out to help him.

The big man closest to him reached out to grab him, but missed.

Pei Lu took only one step forward when she was firmly held by a pair of strong arms . She felt something familiar in this noisy space, and the tense string in her mind suddenly relaxed.

She grabbed the other person's waist with both hands, and her legs began to feel weak.

The man chuckled and praised her: " You did a great job. "

This was the first time Pei Lu was praised for fighting, and it felt really good.

She put all her weight on the man. He held her waist, supported her, and put his coat on her.

Then the two of them took advantage of the chaos and walked out of the bar.

Pei Lu took a deep breath of the fresh, cool air outside, trying to use it to drive away the mess in her mind.

She looked at Si Ting, who touched her head and said, " You don't have to worry about anything anymore. "

Pei Lu could figure out the key, but she wouldn't be able to let go until things were settled.

Si Ting let her go and said, " Go back and take a shower. "

It's smelly and dirty here, he probably won't come a second time.

After hearing what he said, Pei Lu sniffed her sleeve and then curled her lips in an unpleasant expression.

She doesn't like this kind of place either.

The first time she came here was because she was too curious, and she came here secretly with Ye Ke. But somehow they were discovered by Zhou Jieyu, and for several days in a row, the relationship between mother and daughter was very tense.

It was past midnight, and the stars in the sky were very bright. Pei Lu was walking when she suddenly looked up and pointed him in a direction: " North Star. "

The brightest star among a group of stars is the North Star, which our elementary school teacher mentioned in class.

At that time, she loved shiny things and even fantasized about picking a bunch of stars from the sky, stringing them into a necklace and wearing it around her neck.

At that time, she was just like many ordinary little girls, listening to the romantic and touching stories in fairy tales, imagining that she was also a princess living in a castle, and then a brave knight or a handsome prince would appear, overcome all obstacles and come for her regardless of everything.

But later she discovered that there were indeed brave knights and handsome princes in this world, but if she had to choose again, she would like to ride on a white horse and go find her own sea, hold the wind-controlling steering wheel in her own hands, and conquer the stars and the sea by herself.

The days away from Xing City were getting longer and longer. Sometimes when she woke up in the middle of the night, even she felt a sense of unreality, as if all this was just a dream.

But after that hazy and erratic feeling, she felt very at ease.

The path she is on now is the result of her own hard work, step by step. There is no planning or control from others. She is relying on herself to get rid of some shackles.

Si Ting also looked up at the sky above his head, and then said softly: " There are too few stars here. "

Compared to the world he came from, the air here is polluted.

Pei Lu collected her thoughts and asked curiously: " Is your world beautiful? "

" Not beautiful. "

Pei Lu was shocked: " But the mermaid kingdom in the movie is very beautiful, with a crystal palace and countless jewels. "

" Mermaid? "

When Si Ting repeated the word, some bubbly fairy tales immediately came to his mind.

Pei Lu nodded, thought for a moment and said, " But mermaids are foreign beauties, and you have black hair and black eyes, so should we say you are a mermaid? "

Si Ting only said: " There is no land in our world. "

" Is it all sea? " Pei Lu was surprised.

" It's all blood, we're at war. "

There is an endless struggle. When he is alive, he struggles for his own status. After he dies, he struggles for others.

He fell into the cold trench, but their war would not end because of one person.

Until he was taken away by the people from the " headquarters " for disturbing the order of space, the sea water was still red.

Pei Lu shuddered and whispered, " He also said that I can go visit it when I have time. "



If it's true as the man said, someone like her would be cannon fodder in a matter of minutes if she got into the water.

" But before I left, I heard that the two largest kingdoms were discussing a peace agreement. "

Although war is the norm for the belligerent sea people, there have been brief periods of peace in history. During those brief periods of peace, the clever sea people used the rich resources on the seabed to build a glorious underwater city.

Now only ruins remain of the city, and no one knows if it will ever stand tall again in our lifetime. As they were talking, they took a bus back to the community and went upstairs to their home.

" Then I hope they can reach an agreement. It would be even better if we can receive guests then. "

Pei Lu is a dreamy person. She really wants to see with her own eyes such an incredible thing, a miracle from another world.

Si Ting looked at Pei Lu, and the strange feeling in his empty left chest came back again.

There was a tingling and tingling sensation, as if several small ants were crawling around on it. But he was absolutely sure that there were no ants on or inside his body.

The first thing Pei Lu did when she got home was to run back to her room, find clothes and take a shower, using refreshing shower gel to wash off the unpleasant smell of cigarettes and alcohol on her body.

Then she put on the facial mask comfortably, fell on the sofa, and started a video chat with Ye Ke.

Ye Ke has already started preparing to return home. The old man of the Li family has passed away, and her father has to return to attend the funeral.

She has been staying abroad, so she doesn't know what exactly happened to the Li family. Anyway, she feels a little emotional.

" The world is changing so fast. I heard from my mom that the young master of the Li family suddenly became very aggressive. He had a big fight with his eldest brother in the hospital and even threatened to send him to jail sooner or later . It's more exciting than filming a movie. I really regret going abroad. "

The Li family is the leader of Xing City, and the Ye family's head office has business dealings with them, so changes in the Li family may very likely affect their business.

But the Pei family ...

Pei Ruhai wanted to get on board the Li family's big ship, but he couldn't even get a ticket from beginning to end. He didn't know whether the other party would have this idea again after the changes in the Li family this time.

As the two chatted, they talked about Pei Lu, and Pei Lu told Ye Ke everything that happened that day.

Ye Ke stroked his chin and said, " This guy is really capable and smart, how come his family went bankrupt? "

Pei Lu: "..."

Pei Lu said seriously: " Maybe it's just bad luck. "

" Tsk, " Ye Ke said, " He's handsome and smart. You should take him down as soon as possible. I think Mr. Si will make a comeback sooner or later. "

" The outcome is still uncertain. " Pei Lu said stubbornly.

Ye Ke rolled his eyes and said, " Needless to say, you used a wine bottle to blow up the heads of those debt collectors, how could they let you go? With your family, do you really think they will protect you? "

He would definitely run as far away as possible, maybe even run away to avoid debt .

I don't know when we will meet again in the martial arts world. Maybe when we meet again, Pei Lu will not be as vulnerable as she is now.

By then, the Pei family won't be able to do anything to them.

As for that group of second-rate debt collectors.

As long as they are in Xing City, even if Pei Ruhai is gone, there is still her Ye family. Who can do anything to Pei Lu?

Ye Ke said that he would help her deal with that group of people so that she would not have to worry about anything, but Pei Lu shook her head and said, " Si Ting told me not to worry about it. "

Ye Ke raised his eyebrows, put his hands on his cheeks and said: " You really trust him. "

Pei Lu smiled.

They are bound to live together for a period of time, and it would be a sad thing if they couldn't build trust.

She stretched and said, " Actually, I'm tired too. "

She is really a lazy person. If fate hadn't suddenly given her such a critical blow, she might have just been a lazy person for the rest of her life. Why bother about things that can be worry-free? Just as she was thinking this, the light above her head suddenly started flashing and the signal on her cell phone was cut off.

Pei Lu looked up at the light, confused.

Just at this moment, Si Ting also came out of the bathroom.

" Ding! Congratulations to the host for passing the primary stage and officially winning the mission qualification! "

The long-lost mechanical sound suddenly came from the sky. Pei Lu was stunned for a moment, and then found that Si Ting was walking towards his room as if he saw nothing.

Pei Lu thought that the other party didn't notice anything wrong, but the man suddenly said, " Ask it for money. "

Pei Lu was stunned.

The system in her mind shook.

Si Ting looked into her eyes meaningfully, as if he wanted to see something through those eyes:

" It has money. "

The system " sizzled " and was paralyzed by fear, and then it started to convulse again.

The door of the room was gently closed, and the living room became quiet again. The system said in a trembling voice: " Where were we just talking about ..."

Pei Lu said: " I want money from you. "

system: "....."

Pei Lu stood up and tore off the mask on her face, then ran to the bathroom to wash her face and knocked on Si Ting's door.

system: "....."

Pei Lu hugged the man's arm, "Hurry up and teach me how to ask for money!"

system: "....."

Si Ting looked into Pei Lu's eyes, and then with a "pop", a small white robot fell to the ground and spun around, with the black electronic screen of its eyes smashed into a mess.

Pei Lu squatted down and looked at the little robot with some curiosity. She felt so aggrieved that she wanted to cry.

It's just here to do business, why is it being treated like this?

Pei Lu boldly poked the little white robot, then looked back at the man in surprise: "Is this the system?"

Pei Lu relied on the floor heating and didn't wear shoes at all. Si Ting's eyes fell on her pair of white feet. He felt that the temperature of the ground might not be warm enough for a human girl. It would be best to lay a soft carpet on it and let her step on it.

The system had never been teased by clients like this. Those people did not worship this unrealistic and incredible thing as a god, but they were cautious and respectful. Who would be like this daring little girl and poke it like this!

The dignity of being a ruler is gone!!

The system was so angry that the signal lights were flashing, but Pei Lu just thought she was cute, even cuter than the little sweeping robot that Ye Ke bought.

The system, having learned of her thoughts, was once again furious.

The system said unhappily: "I am here to talk about serious matters! The client has adapted well and has passed the preliminary assessment. Please continue to work hard."

Pei Lu had seen the contract before, but she thought she would never see the system again, but she didn't expect it to appear halfway.

Because of Si Ting's unexpected joining, the system returned to the headquarters and held an emergency meeting with the leaders to re-evaluate Pei Lu's abilities.

Since Pei Lu has the ability to make Si Ting, a big troublemaker, obey her, she is a talent.

Moreover, this gentleman does not want to go back, and no one can persuade him to go back.

Therefore, after careful consideration, colleagues and leaders decided to cancel the original list of villains and list Pei Lu as a special client who would only be responsible to this boss.

The system was figuring out what to say, and then the nightmare started again. A burst of garbled code crawled through its background, and then the new contract was pulled out.

The system was shaking like a sieve, as if its soul had been sucked out. If its eyes were like those of humans, they would have stared out with blood.

Si Ting flipped through the projected contract and quickly skimmed through the densely packed clauses. Pei Lu stood beside her curiously and soon discovered something wrong: "Has this been changed?"

It wasn't something she could tell from the contract. It was impossible for her to remember all the densely packed amounts in the contract in one go, but the system that was still displaying

garbled characters on the ground was just short of writing the word "guilty" on the display screen.

" Um. "

Si Ting read the contract carefully, so he figured it out after studying it.

There were several task objects in the past, but now only he is written on it.

He glanced at the system lightly, and the system whimpered weakly, pitifully and helplessly.

" Have you changed the contract? " Pei Lu squatted down and asked the little robot seriously.

System: " Hmm. "

Pei Lu said seriously: " I can let it go, but you have to pay more. "

System: " Hmm. "

Pei Lu said: " We can discuss it. Since we are already partners, we need to be honest with each other and pay the penalty first. "

System: " Woo woo woo woo woo. "

The author has something to say:

I changed the name, don't get lost, guys.

And Happy Mid-Autumn Festival, don't forget to eat mooncakes

## Chapter 21

Pei Lu looked up at Si Ting with sympathy: " Brother Ting , how much liquidated damages should we ask for? "

She could see that the system was afraid of Si Ting.

When Pei Lu asked for help, her voice was sweet but also a little servile, like a small hook that kept scratching at his left chest.

Si Ting felt that strange feeling again . He didn't know why , but that special title was like another curse to him. Every time it was pronounced by the girl's red lips , he felt as if he had been electrocuted and felt numb.

The man flipped through the contract and said, " Pay at least one fifth of the total commission amount. "

Pei Lu's pupils trembled.

That's one billion!!

She didn't become rich by helping the villains to turn over a new leaf, she became rich by taking down Si Ting! !

Pei Lu started to feel proud, thinking that it was worth it that she had been so nice to this man for so many days.

Pei Lu began to drift away , but the system was already dead . After a long while, it spoke weakly: " There is no such rule ..."

Their headquarters has always been strong . Not to mention that ordinary clients cannot see the twists and turns , even if they can see it, what can they do? The final right of interpretation

belongs to them. If you insist, they can find reasons from the contract, it's just that it's a bit inhumane.

always been like this until the big incident with Si Ting happened.

Pei Lu calmed down at this time. She tried hard to suppress the corners of her mouth that were about to rise, and said seriously: " I can wait until you have another meeting. "

system: "....."

The system wanted to get angry , but Pei Lu had already been listed as a special talent under observation, so it still had to treat her with caution.

After all, even if many people realize that they are born to be cannon fodder, it is difficult to reverse their fate.

Many times, it is one thing for people to understand the truth , but it is another thing to develop the personality habits and way of thinking that have been formed for more than 20 years.

Pei Lu had the right time, right place and right people . It found her , and there was a big man with a strong aura beside her to help her dispel the bad luck of that little cannon fodder. She also tried her best to make a decisive decision.

Who says luck is not a kind of strength?

If they missed this village, what would happen if this unique big troublemaker in their prison caused any more trouble?

Talent is valuable wherever it goes, so after a while of chaotic data flow in the system, it finally said slowly: " Wait for me for five minutes. "

The speed of time flow in their space-time is different, five minutes is enough.

As he spoke, the little robot on the ground disappeared.

Pei Lu couldn't bear it any longer. She screamed " Ah! " and hugged Si Ting's neck and threw him to the ground.

The soft body suddenly pressed against her, and Si Ting's breathing became disordered for a moment, but Pei Lu was very happy. She didn't care whether others were willing or not. She happily hugged the other person's neck and rubbed it: " Brother Ting, you are my lucky star. Am I really going to be a rich woman? "

Si Ting felt that the other person's body temperature was even hotter than the underwater magma that killed him. He didn't even dare to look at the furry little head that rubbed against him. There was a faint body fragrance on the other person, and now that they were so close to each other, the feeling was even closer. Si Ting felt that he might have been really clouded by the low-quality alcohol, otherwise why would he feel a little dizzy now?

After Pei Lu's excitement, she saw that the person she was hugging didn't move at all. Maybe he didn't like this kind of unlimited touch at all, so she got up a little embarrassedly.

But her eyes were still sparkling, and she asked uncertainly: " Can it really work? "

Si Ting looked at her lively expression, and his tense back relaxed. He supported himself with his arms and sat up and said, " If you had that much money, what would you do? "

Pei Lu really thought about it seriously.

Then she said: " I will probably be a rich woman who retires with a billion in savings without working hard. "

Si Ting: "..."

It doesn't seem very easy to understand.

But after understanding the monetary rules of this world, Si Ting felt that 1 billion was not a lot, not to mention that it was given in RMB and there were currencies with higher exchange rates in the world.

According to the financial operations of those large companies, this is just a one-time or a few-time business, and if things go wrong, the losses will be quick.

Pei Lu, on the other hand, calmed down after her excitement. She quite liked the down-to-earth feeling she had now.

She seemed a little confused when she was suddenly given so much money. She had no interest in investment and finance and couldn't handle it. Her thinking about money was different from that of Si Ting, who was crazy about adventure.

The best solution she could think of was probably to find a reliable financial management company, set up a trust fund or something like that, and just leave the money there to make stable money.

But the confidence with this money is different from the confidence without this money.

From now on, this is her fuck you money. Whenever she encounters any unpleasant things or people, she can generously give him the middle finger and go home to be a rich woman who can enjoy her retirement.

Pei Lu covered her mouth.

No, she was about to laugh out loud again.

When she turned her head, she realized that the man was still looking at her.

Pei Lu stopped laughing, and then happily suggested: " Let's split the money in half. Without you, I wouldn't be able to earn even a dollar. "

The man shook his head slowly and patted her long, smooth hair: " These are all yours, keep them and spend them slowly. "

The tone of his voice was the same as the last time he gave her a New Year's red envelope.

Pei Lu thought of the pile of books covering various industries in the other person's room, and considering that the other person's personality was the opposite of hers, she didn't force it.

It is very easy for Mr. Yu to make money. When he is short of money, he just needs to buy a lottery ticket.

So Pei Lu didn't force the money on him. She patted his shoulder seriously and said, " Then go and give it a try. If you fail, just go home! I will buy a big house and always keep a room for you! "

She laughed after saying this, and she didn't expect that the other party also laughed.

It was a somewhat suppressed laugh, very light and pleasant to the ear, but it could not conceal the joy in it.

Pei Lu's face turned red. When he smiled, it was like a work of art sculpted by a god with great effort, coming alive with brilliance. His eyes, which were always indifferent, were also sprinkled with bits of light, making him look alive.

Pei Lu boldly stretched out her claws to pinch the man's face and warned him seriously: " You look good when you smile, but don't smile too much. You look good even when you don't smile, but you are terrible when you smile. "

Si Ting: "..."

Pei Lu had just finished speaking when the system came back with a ding sound.

Perhaps it was afraid that the monster would pull its virtual form out of the electronic domain again, so this time the system went all out and landed directly in its own little robot form.

" We can give you some compensation for modifying the contract, but you must also guarantee that the task completion rate reaches 100% . "

Hearing what the system said, the man looked down at it.

" Is there still a task completion rate? "

" Of course, you have to make the person being transformed give up those bad thoughts and turn him into a good person. " When the system said the word " good person " seriously , it looked a little guilty when it looked at Si Ting.

The people they originally planned to send over were easy to deal with, as they were people restricted by the " rules " , but for Si Ting, this was useless. Although they said so, they didn't know what would constitute the end for Si Ting.

That's why they decided to let Pei Lu concentrate on dealing with this mermaid, because one person is stronger than five!

The rules have always been strict. Except for those who can slightly adjust the rules of time and space to maintain order, others who come across time and space will be subject to invisible " rule sanctions " .

For example, if it sent a cultivator to this world without magic and spiritual energy, that cultivator would lose his cultivation and become an ordinary person with a slightly stronger physique.

This is the rule, which restricts all possibilities of getting out of control.

However, it was incredible that this evil mermaid could lead the army to overcome the loss of control after being cursed. Even after he came to this world, the curse on him could still work.

So what is the end for him?

Dead?

How will he die?

The system couldn't figure it out, and even the mastermind at headquarters couldn't figure it out. This man did not run away, probably because he was seeking this kind of ending. I wonder if he can get what he wants.

Pei Lu had already imagined what it would be like to be a rich woman, so she had to get this fuck you money , so she said: " Okay, let's sign a guarantee. "

The system looked at Si Ting again, and he didn't seem to react.

So the system was relieved. After Pei Lu signed the guarantee, it breathed a sigh of relief and said happily: " Okay, I hope you can continue to get along happily! ! "

The system went into a state of silence after it finished speaking. It really didn't want to stay with Si Ting for even a second, for fear that the code would be pulled out of it.

Pei Lu received the text message from the bank the next day. She was half asleep when she heard the text message alert tone.

She subconsciously turned her head to touch her cell phone, which lit up with a message alert and showed a text message from the bank. She was startled, vaguely guessed something, and woke up instantly.

Pei Lu held the phone tightly, her mouth opened and couldn't close. Her money had arrived!!!

" I'm rich!!! "

She jumped up and rushed towards Si Ting's room.

Si Ting's room was open. In fact, because she went to bed too late, it was already noon.

Pei Lu rushed into the man's room and saw him sitting in front of the computer.

This computer was given to him by Pei Lu. Seeing that he was always reading books, she said he could use it. It did contain more information than in the books, and it was also convenient for him to look up relevant information. However, he still felt that paper books felt better in his hands, so after he got it, he rarely used it unless it was necessary.

Pei Lu subconsciously looked towards the computer, and saw the familiar Pei family members on the computer screen. At the entrance of the community, several unfamiliar faces were entangled at the door. During the pushing and shoving, a woman fell to the ground, and Pei Lu happened to see the person's face through the magnified lens.

That's Zhao Yazhen!!!

She exclaimed in surprise: " What is this? "

She calculated based on this angle and concluded that this thing was most likely a surveillance camera in the residential area.

Pei Lu took a deep breath and then looked at the man sitting on the chair. His posture was not very straight and his fingers were tapping on the edge of the computer.

Pei Lu was a little confused and didn't know how he got the surveillance footage of Pei's community.

Is his learning ability so terrible?

But now was not the right time to ask that, so she leaned closer with one hand on the table and looked over as well.

But--

" sound? "

Si Ting glanced at her and tapped a few more times on the keyboard. In a residential area more than ten kilometers away from here, a mobile phone that had fallen to the ground during a scuffle flashed and turned on the microphone silently.

Complete sound, synchronized with the picture, came out from the computer.

In the picture, the thin man who was collecting debts at the bar yesterday was standing there arrogantly. Two men were holding Pei Fan's arms, and the other party had been beaten so badly that he couldn't utter a word.

Zhao Yazhen sat on the ground and refused to get up, then started to make a scene.

As mentioned before, the project of relocating the community is only halfway completed. The occupancy rate of this area adjacent to the new district is not high. It is the middle of the day and it is not a holiday, so it is naturally not very lively here.

So these people were the only ones making noise in front of the building, and even the security guards didn't hear anything.

It is true that some residents upstairs heard the noise, but it was obvious that those people were not good people. They couldn't figure out whether it was the Pei family who caused the trouble themselves, so who would dare to go down?



Pei Fan was being held up, with bruises on his face from yesterday's beating. He could hardly speak clearly at this moment. Seeing that his own mother was also implicated, he could only cry and tell her everything about how he failed to control himself and went out to gamble and lose money.

Zhao Yazhen was so angry that she wanted to jump up and beat this useless guy to death. Pei Fan had never seen his mother like this. In order to prevent Zhao Yazhen, who had picked up a large stone, from really beating the creditors to death and leaving them with no place to collect debts, the two originally ferocious men tried to stop Zhao Yazhen.

" You bastard!! " Zhao Yazhen was really going crazy.

The money that I had saved so hard to pay for the down payment on Pei Fan's marriage and house purchase has already been used to pay off this useless guy's debts. The family is already in such a difficult situation, who can come up with so much money?

Thinking back to the last time, Pei Fan knelt in front of her, crying and cursing herself for being a good-for-nothing, wishing he could jump off the roof right now, with a look of sincere repentance. She wished she could travel back in time and beat herself to death for being soft-hearted at that time.

Why did you become so soft-hearted? !

None of their family members have jobs. They have a huge sum of more than 200,000 yuan, and the interest rate is so high. How are they going to survive in the future?

Zhao Yazhen really shed tears and was truly regretful. She thought about the miserable situation she had to tighten her belt to make ends meet after paying back the debt last time, and also thought about the days she would face in the future.

At that moment, Zhao Yazhen really wished she had never married Pei Feng and never given birth to such a child.

Perhaps she was really angry with her disappointing son, so even though two people tried to stop her, Zhao Yazhen still threw the stone in her hand and smashed Pei Fan's head.

Pei Fan saw that his mother was not soft-hearted. It was useless for him to pretend to be pitiful. He also became anxious: " It's all because you are incompetent! Others have lost more money than me, but they have parents to support them! "

" you-- "

Zhao Yazhen's eyeballs were about to pop out of her head. Her eyes were red and she looked extremely angry. That look scared the skinny guy who had been doing evil for years and had no conscience.

But the fright only lasted for a moment, and the thin man immediately said fiercely: " It's no use for you to act in front of me, and what about your daughter? Find her here for me, damn, she actually dared to hit me, and we have nothing to do with this ..."

But before he could finish his harsh words, Zhao Yazhen gasped for breath, her eyes rolled back, and she fainted.

Pei Feng stayed up late drinking and just got home at noon when he saw this scene.

Naturally, the thin guy caused trouble for Pei Feng again. His guess was suddenly proven wrong, and Pei Feng was so angry that he wanted to beat this useless guy to death.

Later, someone couldn't stand it anymore and called the security guard, who then called the police. The police and the ambulance came together.

Seeing that the situation was not right, the experienced thin man took his men and slipped away first. Pei Feng and Pei Fan were taken away by the police station, and Zhao Yazhen was put on the ambulance.

It was not until Zhao Yazhen was taken away by the ambulance that the crowd gathered below slowly dispersed.

Pei Lu watched all of this calmly and glanced at Si Ting again.

The thin guy couldn't find her, so he could only make trouble for her through the Pei family. The Pei family didn't know where she was. Pei Fan alone was enough to cause them trouble. Now that she had provoked them, they would naturally be eager to cut off ties with her.

However, that was indeed the case, but it was not entirely what Pei Lu thought.

The thin guy was resentful of the person who almost cut his head with a wine bottle that night, so when the Pei father and son came out of the police station, he not only demanded the debt, but also inquired about the whereabouts of their daughter in a ferocious manner.

Pei Feng refused to admit his relationship with Pei Lu, saying that the girl didn't recognize him and that he didn't have Pei Lu's contact information at all. He knew Pei Lu even less than Zhao Yazhen.

Pei Fan was willing to expose Pei Lu, but he couldn't provide any useful information. Even if he wanted to ask Pei Mengmeng for Pei Lu's contact information, Pei Mengmeng had already blocked him.

Why doesn't he look for Zhao Yazhen?

Zhao Yazhen, who woke up in the hospital, burst into tears. Then, while her husband and son were detained, she went back to pack up all the valuables in the house and ran away.

No one knew where she went, but it was clear that she didn't want this home anymore.

She also heard that group of people wanted to cause trouble for Pei Lu and knew that Pei Lu had offended them.

Zhao Yazhen was really scared. She was afraid that Pei Lu would be sought out for revenge by that group of people, thus exposing her whereabouts and implicating herself.

Besides, my daughter has no money and can't even afford the tuition by working. How can she help me?

So she just disappeared.

Of course, what happened when Pei's father and son came back from the police station and found that his wife (biological mother) had run away was all a story for later.

Now, the two people who were watching this farce from a distance fell into silence for a moment.

Pei Lu had mixed feelings, but Si Ting had no emotions.

Pei Lu wiped her face and said, "I'm hungry."

The man nodded, understanding what she meant, "Let's go out for dinner."

So Pei Lu ran back and planned to change her clothes first.

But while changing her clothes, she remembered something important.

Things have come to this point, so there is naturally no need for her to stay here.

She will have to go back to school sooner or later, so should she consider the housing issue first?

She is rich now, so it is more than enough for her to buy a big house.

But the bank has no doubts about the source of the money, but her good friends will, such as Ye Ke, her closest sister.

It was an indisputable fact that she was kicked out of the Pei family. If she didn't tell the other party about such unexpected wealth, the other party would not believe it. She had signed a confidentiality agreement with the system, so she couldn't tell anyone.

So when Si Ting went out, he saw the little girl who had changed into a clean white dress, smiling like a flower and hugging his arms.

She needed help, so she spoke sweetly: " Brother Ting, let's discuss something ..."

So Ye Ke, who was packing his luggage to return home, received this news.

[Lulu] Please help me look for a big house in the university town.

Ye Ke confirmed the news and typed quickly, " We are so poor, just live in the dormitory honestly. What else can we ask for? "

[Lulu] I didn't find him, I brought this handsome guy with me.

【Ye Ke】 !!

[Ye Ke] How come Mr. Si made a comeback so quickly? ?

A week after her younger sister was kicked out of a wealthy family, is she going to live the life of a wealthy person again?

The author has something to say:

It's a bit late today, so I'll update every day at noon.

## Chapter 22

After holding a huge amount of money , Pei Lu's life has not changed significantly. She knows that the colorful world is charming, so she has been shutting herself in the room to write her scripts while waiting for news about Ye Ke.

It was also the first time that Si Ting saw Pei Lu in such a busy manner that she wished she could hang on the computer table and not recognize her relatives . He even brought in two meals.

Pei Lu was so busy that she had a vague impression that Si Ting seemed to have gone out .

She didn't ask where exactly . When she came out , rubbing her neck and stiff lower back , the man Already back.

Her phone was filled with messages from various people, and the one who sent the most messages was Ye Ke.

Ye Ke had already landed for several days . Knowing that Pei Lu was busy , he did not call .

Coincidentally , the house matter went surprisingly smoothly.

As soon as Ye Ke came back to pay New Year's greetings to his aunt's family, he learned that the other party had some difficulties in cash flow recently and wanted to sell a property under his name.

The place was not as close to the university as Pei Lu had initially requested, but it was not too far either . It could be reached in 20 minutes by car.

The main reason is that the Tiancheng Bifu community is famous for its good quality . If you really want to buy it, you can't find a way. This is a rare opportunity, and Ye Ke doesn't want her to miss it.

Pei Lu was naturally happy when she knew about it. She had been coveting that community for a long time . Those rows of elegant small houses were exactly what she wanted. Now that she had money, free time and opportunities, she had to buy herself one.

So she didn't hesitate at all and decided on a time to view the house with Ye Ke . Both parties were acquaintances , so they could meet once the deal was finalized. Aunt Ye was also in a hurry to use the money, so it would be good to have an acquaintance buying the house. She originally bought the house for investment. She originally wanted to give it to her son to live in after he was admitted to university, so she did some simple decoration after the house was purchased.

But later, her son did not live up to his expectations and did not get enough points, so his parents sent him abroad to study in a preparatory course, and the house has been empty ever since.

The house was decorated in a very simple style, so any changes to the style would be appropriate based on this. Besides, the foundation had been laid, so it wouldn't be difficult. If she wanted, she could just buy some furniture she liked and move in.

Si Ting didn't expect that she could find a suitable house so quickly. Pei Lu excitedly showed him the photos. After flipping through them one by one, she remembered to care about her mission target: " What have you been busy with these days? "

Si Ting smiled and said to her: " I went to attend the Li family's funeral. "

It was Li Yequ who invited him there. Even the funeral of a wealthy and powerful family could not go on peacefully.

Even though Li Yequ changed his ways and started doing serious work, he still couldn't change his bad temper that he had had for more than 20 years. He almost got into a fight with Li Zhiqiu after arguing with him for a few words. If he hadn't remembered that it was his own grandfather's funeral, he would have made a huge scene.

Si Ting only went there this once and lost all interest in these so-called wealthy families.

It's just that Mr. Li is a shrewd man. Although he appears to be so heartless to his beloved grandson, he is still soft-hearted and leaves a backup plan for his grandson.

He told Si Ting about this last way out, which was something even Secretary Gao didn't know.

Si Ting was a little impatient about the fact that he had saved the other party's life but was still being forced to take responsibility by the family, but he had taken the other party's painting after all, so he agreed to it as long as he signed his name.

In addition to this incident, Si Ting also took the paintings he got from the Li family to the gallery, where he " accidentally met " the eldest son of a foreign family that specialized in maritime trade and jewelry business.

The young man loved Chinese-style paintings and even visited the Li family several times just for the painting in his hand, but the old man refused to give it up.

And just yesterday, Si Ting gave him this painting.

The straightforward Nicholas warmly invited him to visit his private jewelry exhibition in the evening.

In this way, Si Ting knocked on the door of his business empire with a painting.

Domestic policies and laws are relatively complete, but this is not the case in some other countries. He carefully studied many clauses and read many cases, and finally chose Nicholas. Because this family started out by smuggling jewelry, relying on the now booming shipping business, the jewelry business still has broad prospects.

What he gave to Nicholas was a huge blue crystal. This kind of crystal was extremely rare in his world and was his personal property.

None of his personal belongings that were confiscated by the headquarters were brought here, but that stupid system came twice, and he successfully extracted the other party's core both times.

Taking advantage of the brief confusion, he took advantage of the system's trajectory to get two of his small boxes.

Because the box was small and contained inanimate objects, no one discovered it.

He had planned this from the beginning, otherwise he would not have bullied a small system for no reason.

Now, these two boxes came in handy. The boxes were once his spoils of war, directly moved out of the king's warehouse after defeating a kingdom.

In the past, he disdained these shiny stones, but now it is different, because people in this world call these stones gems.

Si Ting had no intention of hiding it from Pei Lu, but if the thing was not done, he would not publicize it casually. That was just his personality.

Pei Lu asked about his itinerary, and he talked about the funeral, the art exhibition and Nicholas. But Pei Lu's focus was all on the fact that he had made friends. She clapped her hands with a smile and looked at him with a very "loving" look: "Great."

Si Ting: "..."

Si Ting felt itchy when he saw her like this. In order to resist the urge to pinch her cheek, he had to change the subject: "So you're moving out?"

Pei Lu nodded: "Let's move, I still have to go to school ... Well, do you want to go to school?"

Pei Lu asked tentatively.

"I don't want to." The other party's answer was firm.

Pei Lu: "..."

Pei Lu thought carefully about the other party's incredible learning ability and felt that she was worrying too much.

If she doesn't go to school, what will happen to the other party when she goes to school later? Will I get sick if I stay at home all the time?

Seeing that Pei Lu's eyes were looking more and more strange, Si Ting rubbed his fingertips and changed the subject again: "The Li family will have a party, do you want to go?"

Pei Lu blinked.

Yes, although such a thing happened to the head of the family, for such a family, there will be a lot of follow-up matters in the company after the head of the family dies. It is easy to imagine that it is a world of fame and fortune.

Pei Lu opened her mouth and wanted to say no, but then she thought, now she is also a person who wants to build a career, so there seems to be nothing wrong in going there to show her face.

Moreover, the food at the banquet will surely be delicious.

So she asked, " Are you going? "

Si Ting understood the change in her eyes and nodded.

Pei Lu smiled and said, " Then I can't let you be without a female companion. "

Si Ting still couldn't help it, he raised his hand slightly, and stroked her soft hair with his fingertips.

In the following time, Pei Lu compensated the landlady with a large bathtub with a very sincere attitude, then packed the things he didn't want to throw away and gave them to the courier, filling out a form to mail them to Xing City.

Then, she pulled Si Ting along and prepared to check in at the breakfast shop where they had eaten when they first arrived.

This was the place where Wang Kun was bitten by a dog at the beginning.

As the fifteenth day of the first lunar month approaches, most workers have started to return to work, and the boss and his wife have set up their stalls again.

Pei Lu and Si Ting sat in the same seat they had sat in the first time, listening to the regular customers chatting with the boss. The proprietress smiled and told them that their family's debts had been almost repaid, and they planned to open a store nearby this year so that they would be less exposed to the wind and rain in the future.

such a noisy and lively morning, Pei Lu drank a bowl of fragrant and glutinous porridge. Before leaving, she unexpectedly heard about Jiang Lijuan's story.

After all, it was so satisfying the last time Wang Kun was bitten by a dog here, so when everyone gathered at the scene of the incident, they couldn't help but discuss it.

The boss and his wife lived on the other side of the town and had no way of knowing about the bad things that happened to the Jiang and Wang families during this Spring Festival.

She felt relieved just by talking about it, so the two middle-aged men sitting in the front told the story one after another. Pei Lu listened to the general idea of the story while biting on the glutinous red bean pastry, just like listening to a book .

Well, actually, on the day they fought on the second day of the Chinese New Year, she left early, and the hot-tempered old man of the Jiang family actually broke one of Wang Dajun's legs.

So Wang Dajun was rushed to the hospital. Because his leg was broken, he couldn't go anywhere unless he didn't want this leg anymore.

Although the old lady of the Jiang family was soft-hearted, she also knew that it was her son-in-law who did something wrong. She was relatively conservative in her thinking and generally believed that it was better to demolish a temple than to break up a marriage. However, seeing her daughter being so heartless during the day and crying alone at night, she felt distressed. Who wouldn't feel sorry for their own child? So she sighed and didn't care anymore.

Since she didn't care, Wang Kun was even more afraid. He didn't want his parents to divorce, but when he found out that his father had another son outside who looked more like him, he felt like he had eaten a fly. No matter what the reason, he stood on Jiang Lijuan's side.

But in the end, he couldn't resist Wang Dajun's pleading and went to the hospital to see him.

As a result, Jiang Lijuan found out this time and she cancelled her own son's card. Now Wang Kun has no money to go out and no one can help him.

While Wang Dajun was in the hospital, Jiang Lijuan took advantage of Liu Chunyan, who had returned home after the New Year.

In fact, it wasn't really a clear-cut move, because she took away Wang Dajun's cell phone. She used a trick to force this woman, who was planning to stay at her parents' house for a while, to come back.

This time the evidence is even more sufficient. The latest development yesterday was that Jiang Lijuan hired a lawyer to sue Wang Dajun in court. Not only did she want a divorce, but she also wanted him to leave the house with nothing, and she also wanted her to compensate for her mental loss and the money she had spent on the child and the woman over the years.

Pei Lu had had enough of gossip, so she whispered to Si Ting: " In your place, if there is an extramarital affair, how do you usually deal with it? "

Si Ting looked at her quietly for a while, then took out a tissue from the table, wiped the sweet bean paste from the corner of her mouth, and said softly: " People who cheat will be eaten. "

Pei Lu: "..."

QAQ .

It seems that no matter where you are, it is better to stay safe if you don't get married.

Si Ting wanted to laugh when he saw her frightened look. Actually, there was no need to eat her, but their world was more like the feudal society in history here, with a very strict hierarchy. There were also people with power to judge above the levels, and there were not so many so-called right and wrong, justice, morality and laws.

Some of them were really eaten.

He looked at the little girl shrinking her neck while biting the snack, and suddenly he wanted to bite her too.

She must be tastier than red bean-filled snacks.

After less than half a month, Pei Lu returned to the Lorden Hotel again. Her mood was a bit complicated . She couldn't tell whether she was mostly happy or melancholy, but this time she booked a suite with three bedrooms.

The luxurious floor-to-ceiling windows overlook the night view of the entire glorious city. She used to be a part of this city, and she once believed it firmly.

But it was strange that although she was qualified to return to this city again, she had a feeling of being out of place. She seemed to no longer belong here, but she also did not seem to belong to Yong'an Town, where she did not have many good memories.

As she was standing in front of the window looking at the dark night sky, another person's figure suddenly appeared on the glass. The figure overlapped with her own image, and the owner of the shadow was looking at her.

Pei Lu turned her head, and the moment she turned her head, she put away all her thoughts, then took out the tablet and showed it to Si Ting.

" This brand of furniture is pretty good. You can take a look. We can go see the real thing together and buy it later. "

She had never really thought about the possibility of separating from Si Ting. In her eyes, Si Ting was more than just a " man " .

This is the object of her mission, a person who does not belong to this world. He needs her guidance. She is alone now and also needs him.

So of course they were together.

Si Ting watched her stretch out a finger and point at the beige sofa. The sofa was not made of leather with a textured feel, but had a circle of soft fur on it. It must have looked as soft as it felt. This was a style he would never actively choose, but even if it was his own preference, it was just a habit, and he couldn't say how much he liked it, so Si Ting pushed the tablet back: " It's up to you to decide. "

But Pei Lu refused to give in. She puffed her cheeks and pulled the man to sit down. Then she slid the picture and drew a blue sofa: " You choose. I can't decide. I like them all. "

Si Ting said: " You said the house was big. "

" Yes. " Pei Lu said, patting his head, " I bought it and put it in another room. "

After saying this, I laughed and subconsciously said, " But this is not good, right? "

The styles of these two sofas are quite different. When it comes to decoration, shouldn't we try to achieve a unified style ?

As soon as this thought came to her mind, her body trembled. She realized belatedly that she had been led by Zhou Jieyu for so many years. Even though she was not completely influenced by her, she had at least been able to influence her to some extent. Wasn't it that her way of thinking was subconsciously moving towards hers?

Pei Lu looked down expressionlessly, pointed at the two and said seriously: " Then we should take both, one for the living room and one for the game room. "

As she thought about it, she gradually relaxed. The lonely thoughts in her mind disappeared and she began to plan with Si Ting enthusiastically: " I also want to plant flowers, a lot of beautiful flowers, and build a glass greenhouse in the front yard. "

She had always envied the Ye family's glass greenhouse. Mother Ye was a clever woman, and she had her own way of dealing with flowers and plants. She always remembered the warm sunshine and intoxicating fragrance of flowers the moment she opened the door.

However, Zhou Jieyu felt that those flowers and plants were not worth mentioning. When needed, he could just ask someone to deliver them to him. He could get as many as he wanted whenever he wanted. It was a waste of time to get those things.

If you have that kind of time, you might as well go to the company more often and keep an eye on your money and your husband.

Pei Lu always wanted to roll her eyes at such remarks, but she didn't dare.

Now everyone listened to her, and Si Ting had no objection to anything she said, so she became more and more excited as she spoke, and even started to gesture.



There is a large swimming pool at the back, which also needs to be taken care of. The man in front of him is a tail-carrier. He doesn't say it, but Pei Lu feels that he must like water more. Later on, she felt tired, so she pulled the man downstairs for a midnight snack.

While walking around the buffet area with a plate in her hand, Pei Lu didn't know if she was dazzled, but she seemed to see Pei Mengmeng here.

Pei Mengmeng followed a few acquaintances and walked through the beverage area on the west side, carrying plates.

The acquaintances mentioned were Pei Lu's former acquaintances. Those girls used to form gangs. Zhou Jieyu always wanted her to play with them, but Pei Lu didn't like to join them.

She sighed while biting a piece of fried chicken, then looked away.

It seemed that Zhou Jieyu had finally found a child who got along well with her. Pei Lu didn't know if it was because the discussion about decoration just now made her feel so happy in her mind, but she actually felt lucky.

She turned around, smiled happily, and walked towards the man sitting in the corner.

Pei Mengmeng came to celebrate her birthday with her friends today. The birthday today is Liu Yuanyuan, the only daughter of the Liu family. The girls had already agreed to find a big house in the hotel to hold a pajama party .

Pei Mengmeng knew that these people looked down on her because of the environment she lived in. She had been delicate and sensitive since she was a child and had better insight than others.

Before the new year was over, Zhou Jieyu showed her dissatisfaction with her in every way and even enrolled her in many training courses.

When Pei Ruhai found out about her college, he frowned and told her to drop out and learn English, and then go abroad for further study.

Pei Mengmeng accepted all of this silently. This was her chance to change her destiny, but she began to discover that it was not so easy to stay in this wealthy family.

Originally, she was a beautiful, kind-hearted and easy-going person in her own small circle, so everyone gathered around her. But now, she has become a marginal figure who needs to curry favor with others, and has to endure others' sarcasm and overt and covert irony.

The Pei family was not as well-off as these people's families. She couldn't help but think of Pei Lu who left resolutely that day. Perhaps she was the same in the past.

She was actually a little curious about how Pei Lu was doing, but she didn't want to take the initiative to contact those people. She knew the personalities of Pei Feng's family and she was afraid of being stuck with them.

" Stop being in a daze, let's go, what's wrong with you? "

Pei Mengmeng came back to her senses and the girl in front of her was urging her.

" Yes, I'm here. " Pei Mengmeng responded. She caught a glimpse of a figure out of the corner of her eye and her heart beat faster.

Probably not ...

Shouldn't she be sleeping in the same small room she used to live in ... and living the life she thought she would never be able to get rid of?

Pei Lu talked to Si Ting about money again. She wanted to transfer money to Si Ting, but the other party said no at the beginning, so Pei Lu had a headache.

Even if he wants to start his own business, he still needs start-up capital, right?

She had stabbed the cake to pieces. Si Ting, who was sitting opposite her drinking coffee, saw that she was fine just now, but now she looked troubled, so he asked her: " It's not delicious? "

The only thing that can make Pei Lu's face fall when she is hungry is probably food.

But this time he guessed wrong.

Pei Lu looked at him eagerly: " You really don't want money? "

Even the lawyers who brought the case had to pay a huge sum of money! She was a little worried when she thought that she was a wealthy woman, but her good friends who had been through thick and thin with her had not yet become rich.

Si Ting knew what she was struggling with. This money-grubber could talk to him for a long time just because he won a pack of instant noodles online, and now that he got such a large sum of money, she always wanted to share it with him. Somehow, Si Ting felt that the Americano under his command had become a little sweet.

He bent his fingers slightly, stretched out his hand and tapped the smooth forehead of the person opposite him, with a gleam of ambiguous light in his eyes: " How do you think about this? "

Seeing that he seemed to have something to say, Pei Lu sat up straight and pretended to listen attentively.

Then she saw the man take a sip of coffee and said, " You want to buy a house, so you can use my share of the money to pay for it and put both of our names on it. "

This is a good idea.

The cake in Pei Lu's mouth finally tasted sweet again.

The big house she liked wasn't cheap, and since they were going to live together, it was only right for both of their names to be written on it ...

Hmm ...

That's not right.

The house is in both people's names, why does it look like joint property of the couple ? QAQ

## Chapter 23

The more Pei Lu thought about it, the more she felt that Si Ting's proposal was reasonable yet a little weird , so much so that when Ye Ke took her to see the house, she felt that there was a window paper-cut on the transparent glass that could only be pasted on after a wedding.

" How do you feel? " Ye Ke turned around and found that she was distracted, so he patted her shoulder.

" Mr. Si wants to buy a house himself, why doesn't he come and see it himself? " Ye Ke was very surprised.

" He's coming this afternoon . Didn't you give me the key? " Pei Lu shook the key in her hand . " He was called away by a friend this morning. "

" What friend? " Because Ye Ke always felt that the relationship between good friends was not simple, he was particularly curious about the man who looked difficult to get along with.

Pei Lu said: " Li Yeqiu. "

Ye Ke almost choked to death on the milk tea in his hand: " Who? "

" Li Yeqiu. "

" ! "

This guy has become a celebrity in the circle recently . All the scenes he makes are like a movie.

But if Si Ting had a friend like Li Yeqiu at the beginning, why didn't he go to the Li family?

Her eyes drifted back and forth , sometimes to Pei Lu's face , sometimes to the milk tea in Pei Lu's hand . Just when Pei Lu thought that this little girl was going to snatch her milk tea , Ye Ke suddenly said, " He knows Li Yeqiu. Are they close friends? "

Pei Lu: "... Yes, he saved Li Yeqiu's life. "

Ye Ke: " ! "

Suddenly, I can understand why he made a comeback so quickly.

Ye Ke realized: " Li Yeqiu has risen to power, so I helped him, right? "

Pei Lu: "... I don't know. "

Ye Ke looked at her best friend's face again , and then she smiled as if something had suddenly dawned on her. She put her arm around Pei Lu's shoulder, looking disappointed: " Don't you understand this ? You are a hopeless case! "

Pei Lu: "... Can you give me a heads up before you change the subject? Why can't I understand a word you say? "

What should she understand?

Ye Ke laughed and said, "This is not bankruptcy at all. Do you know what bankruptcy is?

Can you call it bankruptcy if you've been broke for a week? Can't you see that he likes you, so he came to you as soon as possible. "

Pei Lu: "..."

Ye Ke concluded: " Tsk, really scheming. "

Pei Lu: "..."

Ye Ke squinted at her: " You must be interested in him too, otherwise why would a single man and a single woman live together? If someone didn't know, they would think you two were looking for a wedding house. "

Pei Lu: "..."

Ye Ke smiled evilly. Pei Lu, who had been bullied all the way, simply gave up and said, " Yes, I want to date him too, that's why I have to live with him. "

Ye Ke had a look on his face that said I knew it, but he nodded in agreement: " Let alone anything else, this handsome guy's face is much better than Chen Lang and Liu Ziming's. "

Pei Lu knew who Chen Lang was, he was the senior who moved around a lot last semester, but who was Liu Ziming?

" It's your ex-fiancé! "

Pei Lu looked disgusted.

It turns out that the man Zhou Jieyu and Pei Ruhai mentioned to her was called Liu Ziming. She didn't know it as clearly as Ye Ke because she was very resistant at first.

It is said that Liu Ziming is one year older than her and is currently studying abroad. If such an accident had not happened, and he had returned home to visit his relatives during the Spring Festival, they would probably have been arranged to go on a blind date.

Pei Lu really understood her friend. If she had denied it three times in a row, Ye Ke would have never stopped. But she just admitted it, and Ye Ke didn't mention it anymore.

Anyway, she doesn't have anyone she likes right now, so let her misunderstanding go on for now.

Ye Ke had just returned to China and had a lot of social engagements to attend, so she left after finalizing this matter. She also enthusiastically invited Pei Lu to go with her.

But Pei Lu knew with her toes what the scene would be like if she went there. Ye Ke wanted to let that group of people know that she was living a good life now, but she didn't want to join in the fun.

So she and Ye Ke parted ways at the gate of the community.

As the saying goes, money makes the world go round. As long as you have enough money, there is almost nothing that cannot be accomplished.

So the day before the Lantern Festival, Pei Lu and Si Ting moved into the big house together. She wanted to hold a small housewarming party, but after thinking for a long time, she couldn't think of the right person. Ye Ke was a good friend and had met Si Ting, but that girl Ye Ke had to fly out of town.

Her script was in the final stage and she had shown it to her good sisters a long time ago. Ye Ke slapped her thigh after reading it and thought it was feasible.

The next issue was finding actors. They had their eyes on a young internet celebrity, but he was in the capital. Since they wanted long-term cooperation, after some initial communication online, Ye Ke decided to meet him in person.

Just when Pei Lu thought they were going to live in their own "world of two", an unexpected person came to the door.

Li Yeqiu was wearing a pair of big sunglasses on his face, a bright red women's coat, a hexagonal beret on his head, and a pair of Martin boots on his feet.

When he was standing at the door holding a cat, Pei Lu was shocked and thought that this was a female model from a magazine.

The female model looked around, pulled down her glasses to look at Pei Lu, and made sure that she had found the right place. Then she pushed her way into the house, pushing past the owner who was blocking the door.

Seeing an uninvited guest coming to the house, Si Ting, who was looking down to see what Tangyuan was, raised his head.

Pei Lu said in bewilderment: "Why didn't you tell me earlier that there were guests coming?"

Si Ting: "..."

After Pei Lu finished speaking, she felt that what she said was a little wrong. Her face turned a little red, and she quickly looked at Li Yeqiu ... and the cat he was holding.

Young Master Li has already walked around the hall on the first floor for a long time, looking around: " Yes, this place is really nice. The night view upstairs must be very good too. "

The cat in his arms remained motionless the entire time. It wasn't the kind of cat that would curl up in its owner's arms because it was unfamiliar with the strange environment.

The cat looked down upon the two-legged animals on the ground with a cold and arrogant look on its face. It was truly disdainful of them, as if it was an honor for them that it was willing to bring its two-legged mounts here.

" Why are you here? "

Pei Lu closed the door and turned around, her eyes locked on the cat.

Cats are good. Actually, she also wanted to have a cat, but Zhou Jieyu didn't let her before, and she was busy in the next few days.

When I saw this little black cat today, all the DNA in her body was awakened.

" Please take me in for a few days. "

Li Yeqiu put his butt on the sofa, then stretched his neck to look at Si Ting: " Dumplings? Any more? Give me a bowl. "

Pei Lu raised her eyebrows: " You don't have a home? "

After asking this question, she herself fell silent. Mr. Li was dead, and only her eldest brother who almost killed her was left. Isn't that a family without a home? "

But Li Yeqiu seemed to have not noticed the fleeting emotion on her face. He stretched and said listlessly, " Yes, it's because I have a home, so those bastards know where to find me. They look for me every day. It's so annoying. "

No one had ever thought that Li Yeqiu was the one who would lead the Li Group forward, so they just regarded him as a spoiled young master. Even if he held a large number of shares in the future, he would definitely not be the one in charge.

So in the past, those senior executives coaxed him, but they didn't understand him.

After the contents of the will were made public, Li Yeqiu announced on the spot that he would take over the position of president of the head office. These people could no longer sit still, and one by one they wanted to find out some information.

So Li Yeqiu was annoyed. Before the first shareholders' meeting after the New Year, he didn't want to reveal any information to these people.

That's why he hid away.

After thinking it over, he still felt that these two people were the most reliable. No one knew these two people. To be more specific, no one knew that he knew these two people.

There is no need to say much about Si Ting, let's just talk about Pei Lu. Although she was the daughter of the Pei family, she had never come close to him even once.

Li Yeqiu has expressed his admiration for this wonderful quality of not being corrupted by wealth and status more than once.

In fact, he didn't know that Pei Lu was just lazy.

Li Yeqiu was scratching the sofa and shouting for food. Si Ting saw Pei Lu standing there staring at the cat in his arms, so he said, " You can stay here. "

Li Yeqiu jumped up from the sofa and grinned.

Then, he saw Si Ting raised his hand, grabbed his Alpha ... by the scruff of the neck, and threw his cool Alpha into Pei Lu's arms.

Pei Lu: "..."

Li Yequ: " ? "

For a moment, the noble Alpha wanted to resist. After all, he was the cat raised by the young master of the Li family. Li Yequ was lawless, and there was only one Alpha in the world who dared to pee on his head.

But the moment this ordinary human lifted the skin from the back of its neck, Alpha's sharp intuition told it that this biped was quite dangerous.

When Alpha looked over with his green eyes, the other party was also looking down at it, holding it by the scruff of its neck and looking at it calmly.

When the usually arrogant Alpha saw those eyes that seemed to contain the abyss, all the hair on his body stiffened and he couldn't even explode.

" Hey ..." Li Yequ picked up the spoon and scooped a dumpling into his mouth, saying incoherently, " You guys can, my cat and my grandfather are not close. "

Alpha, this cool cat, always basks in the sun noble on the tallest flower stand in the house. Li Zhiqu has been scratched by it, and Grandpa Li has been hit in the face by its tail.

If he hadn't gone out today and the ground was too dirty, and this guy hadn't wanted to walk by himself, otherwise he, the real owner, wouldn't have let it stay in his arms for so long.

How could such an arrogant guy be so well behaved in Pei Lu's arms?

Pei Lu didn't understand what Li Yequ meant, because this cat felt soft and warm when she hugged it qwq .

Pei Lu's heart melted. She held the little black cat in one hand and stroked its smooth fur, poking its triangular little black ears from time to time.

The other person's green eyes looked like a pair of gems under the light, and Pei Lu thought they were incredibly beautiful.

Li Yequ was amazed. After finishing his meal, he wiped his mouth, used his cat to pay for his room fee, got a guest room, and even begged Si Ting for a set of clean clothes.

Li Yequ was obviously not as afraid of Si Ting as he was at the beginning.

He didn't know if it was because Si Ting was his savior or because of that soul, but he looked at Si Ting as if he were his own grandfather. He subconsciously felt that the other party was reliable and treated him as a brother.

After all, although he has a brother, that brother is a piece of shit.

When Li Yequ first took office, although he had the help of Secretary Gao, he still had a lot of things to deal with and learn, so he went back to his room with his computer.

Pei Lu became addicted to petting cats and asked Li Yequ to leave his kittens on the first floor. Alpha was already numb at this time. If he had encountered this situation in the past, the noble Alpha would have scratched him with his claws.

But now, its skin seemed to be covered by something terrifying, as if it was being stared at by some demon. The evil thing had spread poisonous insects all over its body, and as long as it didn't obey, the poisonous insects on its body would eat it immediately.

So it didn't dare to move and could only lie in the arms of this beautiful biped.

Pei Lu was no fool, and she soon realized something was wrong: "Is your cat sick? Why doesn't it move at all?"

Li Yejiu: "..."

Li Yejiu was actually quite surprised. When did his cat become so well-behaved? Could it be that the feng shui of these two people's home was good and his Alpha was feeling comfortable there?

The Alpha Dead Fish, who was motionless and stiff and had his ears stroked, looked at his shit shoveler, but the other party just laughed like an idiot and went upstairs with his computer.

Pei Lu was about to turn around when she saw Li Yejiu's coat hanging at the door. She suddenly asked, "Whose coat is this?"

This is definitely a women's model.

Li Yejiu turned around halfway up the stairs, revealing a mouthful of white teeth, looking like a fool: "I asked the nanny for it when I left home. This is called disguise!"

Pei Lu: "..."

Alpha: "..."

Destroy it, I'm tired:).

Li Yejiu went upstairs, and before going upstairs he specifically emphasized the matter of the Li family banquet to Pei Lu.

"It's definitely better than what you get out there. I spent a lot of money. There were performances, fireworks, and lantern riddles ... all for those old fools. I had to invite a few more friends ..."

Pei Lu was lazily watching TV and petting the cat on the first floor. Si Ting was sitting on the other end of the sofa, turning on his computer, seemingly writing something. The two of them were doing their own things and didn't chat, but the atmosphere was unusually harmonious. Pei Lu was distracted while watching TV and remembered her beautiful evening dress, which was a new model that Ye Ke got before he came back from abroad. It was just taken from the fashion week. Ye Ke had bad intentions and got clothes from the same series for her and Si Ting, which made them look like couple outfits.

The clothes have been sent for size modification. Logically, the process should be reversed. In the past, she had her own size records in fashion stores of various brands, and any clothing brand she wanted would be sent directly to her according to her size.

But before, that was all Pei family's money, and Pei Lu was still thinking about finding an opportunity to pay back all the Pei family's money. She thought Pei Ruhai would definitely go to the Li family's banquet, so that was a good opportunity.

When Pei Lu thought of clothes, she thought of the necklace she liked. She didn't have any jewelry now, so she had to ask Ye Ke to go shopping in a jewelry store.

But to be honest, she had already looked at those styles on several official websites, but didn't see any that particularly appealed to her.

The green one is too dignified, the red one is too formal, the white one is too plain, and the black one doesn't match her clothes. She wants a more lively color, but there is no suitable style. These things just flashed through her mind, and soon her attention was drawn back to the TV.

Pei Lu was watching a fantasy drama that has been very popular recently, because she has also been writing about it recently. Although it is a nonsensical version, she can occasionally find relevant inspiration and inspiration in similar themes.

Pei Lu actually doesn't like watching this kind of drama, not because it's poorly made, but because fairy tale dramas are generally very cruel, and she can't stand cruel things. She feels that as she gets older, she needs to watch something sweet.

It just so happens that today is the climax of the whole play. The heroine and the hero are forcibly separated, one goes down to the earth to suffer, and the other has all her memories wiped out and becomes a ruthless god.

At the moment when the mountains collapsed and the earth cracked, the crying voices of the heroine and the hero came from the TV, and Pei Lu's tears began to fall like they were free.

Si Ting finally looked up from the computer and looked at her.

Feeling that Si Ting was looking at her, Pei Lu looked at him with tears in her eyes and accidentally hiccuped.

Si Ting: "..."

He coughed and put his fist to his lips to hide the smile on his lips.

Pei Lu: "..."

I can't live like this. When you see a girl crying, shouldn't you come over to comfort her?

Pei Lu was so angry that she threw away Alpha, who was crying, and rushed towards Si Ting: "What are you laughing at? Look, you are crying too! "

Si Ting was indeed paying attention to what was happening on TV just now, because he had never seen this thing before, and he had never seen this kind of story before, but he was not attracted by the plot, but was dealing with the emails exchanged with Nicholas.

Pei Lu rushed towards him and was about to pinch his face, but Si Ting took the lead and pulled out a piece of paper from the tissue box and gently pressed it on her face.

" Crying like a little cat. "

Pei Lu pressed the paper with her hand and pouted unconvinced, but she still wiped away her tears first.

" Don't you see? They separated and will never see each other again. "

" We can still see each other. " Si Ting explained to her.

Pei Lu whispered: " You haven't seen it, how do you know? "

Si Ting said: " Promotional videos for this drama are everywhere. "

Pei Lu: "..."

Pei Lu said: " That's different. They have all forgotten the past. "

But she also said: " It doesn't matter, we will be together in the end anyway. "

Si Ting suddenly asked her: " In your opinion, which is more important, the process or the result? "

Pei Lu thought about her viewing habits. No matter she was watching a TV series or reading a novel, she liked to drag the progress bar and see the ending in advance. Generally, if it was a be , she would not watch it.

So she said: " I think the result is more important. It would be great if we can be together. "



After she finished speaking, she saw that the other party turned his attention back to the computer, and stretched out her paw unhappily: " What are you watching? Watch TV with me. " As soon as she got closer, she saw an email in English.

Pei Lu was stunned for a moment, then shook her head and looked over again. It was not English, but a minor language.

She was shocked and asked, " What is this? "

Before the other party could answer, she slapped her head and said, " The Nicholas you told me about last time? "

Seeing the other party nod, Pei Lu moved closer and asked with interest: " Are you chatting? "

Si Ting remembered the photos of beautiful women the other party sent him and the invitation to join the party . He pursed his lips slightly and shook his head.

Pei Lu said " Oh " , showing no interest anymore. She turned around and tried to pull the little black cat that was trying to escape.

Alpha had never been treated like this by stupid humans. It couldn't stand it at all. Finally, the inexplicable pressure on its body was gone. How could it possibly be obedient?

Then it ran away in a whoosh, and its shadow was gone, so fast that it left only a trail on the white carpet.

" Don't run, are you afraid of strangers? "

Pei Lu also forgot about the abuse she had just suffered on TV, and stood up and started chasing the cat.

But how could a cat with two legs catch up with a cat with four legs? Alpha ran upstairs, perhaps because it felt it was safer, or maybe it smelled the scent of its owner there. But when it didn't see anyone upstairs, it ran down again.

Pei Lu chased it back and forth, and even ran a long circle in the living room. She was out of breath, but still couldn't catch Alpha. The arrogant cat finally glanced at her with noble and coldness, and jumped onto the flower stand by the window.

Pei Lu was so angry that she turned to Si Ting with puffed cheeks and said, " Catch the cat for me. "

Si Ting was holding his cell phone and sending a message to someone. Upon hearing this, he looked up in the direction of the tall flower stand, put the phone aside, stood up and walked towards the flower stand.

Alpha, who had been holding his head high just now, suddenly froze, and his claws almost failed to grab the horizontal railing below.

Pei Lu also noticed that the black cat was obviously afraid of Si Ting, so she rubbed her hands expectantly, took a step back, and waited for her cat.

At this moment, the phone on the table vibrated, but I didn't have time to turn off the screen.

Pei Lu subconsciously looked down and was stunned.

She took a second to react, then her eyes widened in disbelief.

Over there, Si Ting walked over, raised his hand, and grabbed Alpha Fate's neck again.

Alpha escaped the fate of being stroked again that night because Pei Lu found something cuter than a cat.

On Sting's lit screen was a picture that Nicholas had sent him.

Nicholas, this frivolous young man, is always talking nonsense. Recently, he has been guessing that Si Ting has a complicated background and wants to make friends with him.

People are like this sometimes . If you flatter him, he may not bother to pay attention to you . But if you treat him indifferently and neither humble nor arrogant , he will be interested in you instead.

Nicholas was worried about his grandmother's birthday a while ago. His grandmother is now the queen mother with the highest status in the entire Dunmore family. Her birthday must be extremely grand and extremely important . Nicholas wanted to give her a special gift.

Everyone knows that old Mrs. Dunmore likes jewelry . The Dunmore family was originally a jewelry family. Although their early history of making a fortune was not glorious, it was also because of this that the people in the Dunmore family had seen all kinds of rare things. Among old Mrs. Dunmore's private collection , there were even queen crowns and pope's scepters from more than ten centuries ago.

it is very difficult to give a gift that will surprise and please the old lady .

The reason why Si Ting met Nicholas in the gallery was because the other party was actively looking for jewelry with oriental characteristics and he wanted to be different.

He later talked about this issue when he was having dinner with his new friend . He just couldn't keep things to himself, and it was more or less intentional on his part . He knew that many people wanted to please him , so if the matter became public , more people would actively offer him advice.

As a result, Si Ting just ate calmly and didn't buy into the idea at all. Finally, Nicholas couldn't sit still anymore and asked him if he had any good ideas.

Si Ting then gave him an idea.

So Nicholas ran back to his country happily. What Si Ting gave him was obviously very effective, so he came to repay his gratitude.

【 Nicholas 】 【 Image 】

【 Nicholas 】 Believe me, your little girl will love this.

Nicholas didn't know Pei Lu and had never seen her. He said this because when he was having dinner or discussing contracts with Si Ting, he would see this taciturn new friend occasionally replying to messages on his phone with a gentle expression.

The other person's avatar was very cute, a chubby little white duck wearing a bow, so Nicholas thought she was a cute little girl.

Nicholas was right. Pei Lu really couldn't take her eyes off after taking one look.

Si Ting was holding the cat, and seeing that she looked strange, he also looked down.

Then he understood.

The man walked over, turned on his phone again, and asked her, " Do you like it? "

Pei Lu's big eyes twinkled. She grabbed Si Ting's arm that held the phone and looked at the photo on the phone. " Whose is this? Can you buy it? I'll pay for it! "

Nicholas sent him a set of jewelry. Pei Lu didn't recognize it. She just thought it was very beautiful. But it was the work left by the once famous genius jewelry designer of the Dunmore family. It was called "Nightingale and Rose".

In the original story, a young student cried because he was poor and could not pick a rose to win the chance to dance with his beloved girl. For him, the nightingale pierced the rose's thorn with its own heart, pampered the flower with its own blood, and sang all night long, making the bright red rose bloom in the cold winter.

It's a very sad story, but this set of jewelry is not.

The sentimental Master Dunmore shed tears when he read this story for the first time and decided to give a new definition to The Nightingale and the Rose.

So he turned the rose into a shy girl, and the nightingale fell in love with her at first sight and was willing to give everything to win her love.

So he carefully carved a graceful warbler out of gold and pieced together a young rose out of tender pink diamonds.

The light emerald vines carefully cut into leaf shapes were woven into an exquisite cage, imprisoning the warbler who was willing to give up all her freedom.

On the left side of the asymmetrical pendant, the slender gold chain is a caged warbler, and on the right side is a proud pink rose. The matching necklace is a carved layer of thorns. The necklace is not complicated, and the two complement each other, which can perfectly set off the beautiful earrings.

The pink diamonds and light green gems have a lively fairy-like quality, but the gold color adds a bit of nobility and grace that a fairy shouldn't have, making her look neither old nor frivolous.

Alpha was held by the scruff of the neck and dared not move. He could only watch in silence the couple who had forgotten about him.

Seeing that Pei Lu had lost interest in the little black cat, Si Ting simply let it go.

But he felt that based on his understanding of the young master of the Dunmore family during this period, the other party should not want money, and he must have other purposes.

So Si Ting replied.

Pei Lu was overjoyed, then calmed down and asked, "Is this the friend you mentioned earlier?"

Si Ting thought carefully about people's definition of friends in this world, and there was a hint of subtle disdain in his eyes when he looked at his phone.

Nicholas on the other end seemed to be waiting for his message with his phone on. As soon as he sent the message, the other party immediately replied.

【 Nicholas 】 Hey, this is my grandmother's private collection, priceless.

【 Nicholas 】 She wants to give it to you and also wants to invite you to her birthday party to do her a favor?

Pei Lu looked at the message and asked in confusion: "Why would he give you his grandmother's private collection?"

Si Ting said: "Because he also took my things."

Pei Lu was confused: "What is that?"

Does Si Ting have anything?

The man hummed , understood her confusion, and said, " I took it last time when the system was infected. "

The word "拿" is used quite subtly.

Then, Pei Lu went upstairs with the man, and a big box was stuffed into her pocket. The man said that this was a gift for her.

Pei Lu was a little confused. She squatted on the ground with the big box in her arms. The box was too heavy and she couldn't stand up with it in her arms.

She originally just wanted to open the box and see what was inside, but she didn't know Si Ting would suddenly reach out and push the thing to her.

The box is made of wood, black wood. I don't know if this is the original color or if it was painted on later. Anyway, it is a bit ugly. It is the kind that can be placed in a garbage dump without attracting anyone's attention or making others feel out of place.

There was originally a lock, but the iron lock had rusted and broken, and it was just hanging there casually, not locked at all.

When Pei Lu came in just now, the box was placed in the corner, side by side with the trash can. So she didn't know that when she raised her hand to open the box, the things inside would blind her titanium dog eyes.

Under the light, the things inside the box were shining with a holy light that was completely different from this rotten wooden box. It was the holy light of money.

Pearls and gems of various colors were reflected in Pei Lu's pupils. They were red, pink, purple, green, blue, and yellow ... dazzling colors, incredible sizes, and dazzling luster ...

She snapped the box shut , took a deep breath, looked up at the man, then lowered her head again and opened the box.

She was shocked: " It's not a dream! "

Si Ting: "..."

It took Pei Lu several minutes to calm down. She put her hand into the cold gem and saw lovely pink pearls from underneath.

The man squatted down and poked her forehead with a finger. He felt that Pei Lu looked a bit like Xiaolong.

I had been to a world of dragons and magic before, where the dragons had their own nests, all made of colorful gems. Pei Lu's eyes now were like those dragons seeing a mountain of gold. Pei Lu covered her forehead and looked at him, finally understanding why this man didn't want her money.

Then, as if she remembered something, she pointed at herself and then at the black wooden box: " You just said, give this to me? "

" Yeah. " Si Ting could see that she liked it.

Based on what he had learned over the past few days, Si Ting knew that Pei Lu was actually a pampered little princess, but when she left her original home, she took nothing with her except herself.

But Si Ting felt that these were unimportant. They were all external things. He could give her better, and she could earn better for herself.

So, you see now, she doesn't need to be sad about what she has thrown away, she has something better.

Pei Lu sat down cross-legged on the carpet, and then began to carefully take out those expensive gems. The gems had not undergone post-processing and cutting, and some of them looked ugly in shape, but they were very large, so it was easy to imagine how much they were worth.

In addition to gems and a few diamonds, the most abundant thing is pearls, the lovely light pink pearls.

Finally, her eyes were dazzled and she felt a little dizzy, so she stopped.

" We need to go to the bank and open a safe deposit box, and then keep it safe. " Pei Lu made a serious decision.

Si Ting said he wanted to give it to her, so the things in the box were of no use to him. In other words, he had already taken what he needed.

So it is not safe to keep so many big treasures at home ... It is better to put them side by side in the trash can in the corner ...

" Well, you decide. "

Si Ting didn't care.

Perhaps because she had suddenly become rich once before, Pei Lu was not so happy this time that she lost her mind. She became curious: " What gift did you prepare for Mr. Nicholas's grandmother? "

" It wasn't a gift I prepared, he bought it from me. "

But he did do a favor. Nicholas picked out a blue-green gem from him. It was a very unique color, a color that the other party had never seen before, and he thought his grandmother would definitely like it.

When Si Ting heard that it was a birthday present for a lady, he picked up two pink pearls and asked him to take it back and grind it into powder and put it into skin care products such as facial cream. It seemed that Nicholas did as he was asked.

Before he fell into the trench and died, he was the most capable general beside the Mermaid King, so he entered the Sea Palace many times. He knew that the Mermaid King's partner and many people liked to use this kind of pearl for skin care.

After Pei Lu finished listening to his simple narration, she looked at the pink pearls with a different look in her eyes.

Si Ting thought for a moment and said, " You don't need it. You are still very young. "

The little girl's face is softer than pearls, so she doesn't need this kind of thing.

Pei Lu looked up, blinked, and closed the box.

It was not until the next morning when Li Yejiu went downstairs to look for food that he realized he was going to be a left-behind child. Li Yejiu was very unhappy and said loudly: " I'm going too. You take me with you. I don't want to be alone at home! "

Li Yejiu didn't know where the two were going until he got on the plane. He held Alpha and talked to him for a long time, but he still couldn't understand why Si Ting was favored by Deng Moer and was invited to the old lady's birthday party.

Because he has a quarter of foreign blood in his body, he had stayed in his maternal grandparents' home until Dunmore, which was a rather xenophobic and low-key family. Over the years, there was only one outlier like Nicholas.

When the plane that came to pick them up was flying over the vast ocean, Li Yeqiu slapped his head, trembling as he remembered where he was going and realized that his hands were empty. If he was going to celebrate old Mrs. Dunmore's birthday, he couldn't just give Alpha to her. He regretted it again, so he angrily accused the two people: " You don't explain clearly, you will be embarrassed later. "

Pei Lu said seriously: " It doesn't matter, we didn't bring any gifts. "

Before she left, she specifically asked Si Ting whether she needed to prepare any gifts, and Si Ting said no.

But Pei Lu thought about it carefully and decided to carry a few pearls with her.

She had no intention of using this magical thing to do business. After all, it was not inexhaustible. But when she thought of Si Ting's relationship with Nicholas, she still felt that this favor was necessary.

However, the only thing that made her unhappy was that the dress she had just delivered this morning had already been worn. If she went back to attend the Li family's banquet, it might be too late to prepare, and she might have to ask Ye Ke for help.

Nicholas was flying the plane himself. The plane flew across the ocean, flew over a small island, and then landed on a wide tarmac. The birthday party here was not as exaggerated as Pei Lu had imagined. If no one had told her that someone was celebrating a birthday here, she would have even thought that this was just an elegant island.

Because of the relationship with his maternal grandfather, Li Yeqiu and Nicholas are old acquaintances, but their relationship was not very warm before. At this moment, Nicholas is much more enthusiastic towards Li Yeqiu.

Li Yeqiu didn't bring any gifts, and felt guilty, so he smiled politely to the young master of the Deng Moer family.

Before Pei Lu had time to see what was carved on the statue in front of the castle-like building, she saw the person under the statue. Her pupils suddenly shrank and she even wanted to rub her eyes in disbelief.

Nicholas followed her gaze and said with a grin, " That's my aunt. Do you want to meet her? "

Pei Lu immediately nodded like a chick pecking at rice.

Nicholas smiled and took her to the bottom of the statue.

I don't know what he said to the woman, but the woman smiled at Pei Lu and extended her hand to her.

Pei Lu was like a fan who had successfully chased his idol, with stars in his eyes when he looked at the woman.

Li Yeqiu stared at the woman for a long time before he slapped his head and remembered: " Ah, this is Emma, the female writer. "

Emma is a novelist. Her suspense novels are bestsellers all over the world. This year, the original adaptation "The Butterfly", for which she herself was the screenwriter, just won the most

prestigious film award. She is now one of the hottest figures in the foreign film and television circles.

Li Yequ sighed, " That's great. She should be happy to meet Emma on this trip. "

He knew that Pei Lu was also writing something and seemed to be planning to film something, so it was no surprise that she liked Emma.

Nicholas left Pei Lu there and came back, then smiled and stretched out his hand to the two people, " Come on, I'll give you a taste of the wine brewed by the manor. "

Si Ting's gaze stayed on the hands of Pei Lu and the woman named Emma, which were simply clasping each other. He seemed to have never seen Pei Lu smile so happily before, with her eight little white teeth showing.

The woman was a bit frivolous. She pinched my face and hands when we first met.

Si Ting frowned. He felt something strange. He couldn't describe it, but it didn't seem like happiness.

Nicholas noticed his gaze and thought he was worried that Pei Lu would be bullied, so he smiled, patted his arm and said, " It'll be okay. "

This is their family gathering, everyone is family, there won't be any of those bloody scenes seen in TV dramas.

Pei Lu was really very happy because she had been a loyal reader of Emma when she was in middle school. At that time, Emma was still an unknown little author who had just won a newcomer award.

Because the publishing house they cooperated with at that time was a bit disappointing, the Chinese version in China was not very smooth to read, which affected the sales of the story in China. Ye Ke saw her holding a book excitedly all day long and reading a few pages before eating, so he ran to buy one out of curiosity. As a result, she fell asleep after reading only two pages.

So Pei Lu can be said to be a fan of Emma for ten years. She can even retell the love story between the immature vampire and the human girl that was published in a magazine when Emma was in her teens.

Emma now presents herself as a strong woman in public, and she also has the style of a cool and sexy older sister. No one knows about the Western Mary Sue stories she wrote during her adolescence, which are still her favorites now.

It's just that she has grown up now, and the Internet is more developed than before, so her knowledge has expanded from domestic to global, and she will occasionally use a ladder to visit novel websites in other countries.

She had also watched that popular fantasy drama in China, the one that made Pei Lu cry yesterday.

Pei Lu didn't expect her idol to be so down-to-earth. She was so excited about the conversation that she opened her mobile phone, clicked on her green APP , and gave her several recommendations in a row. As a result, the beautiful big sister smiled and opened her mobile phone as well.

" premium VIP" above the other party's user name , her jaw dropped.

The two had a very pleasant conversation. Finally, Emma took Pei Lu to the big castle, to her room, and showed her her study.

Emma read a lot of different books . In addition to some familiar classics, there were also books on philosophy, economics, sociology, psychology, etc. Pei Lu also saw constellations and divination, as well as baby-raising guides.

Pei Lu, who knew that Emma didn't even have a boyfriend: "..."

Pei Lu completely forgot that she was actually there to attend a birthday party, so Emma smiled and introduced her treasures to her. She was kind to everyone and liked making friends with others, not to mention that this was a cute little fan who had liked her for ten years.

It wasn't until Emma looked at her watch, patted her on the shoulder and said to her, " It's about time , " that she remembered that today's show was not an idol meeting.

When Emma brought Pei Lu back to the courtyard, it was much more lively. The originally empty table was now filled with delicious meals, with an exquisite cake at the front.

Pei Lu saw old lady Dunmore, a very majestic woman who wore a green velvet dress and jewelry of matching colors. Somehow, Pei Lu suddenly thought of the old queens in TV dramas. Emma was the old lady's daughter, very favored, and she waved to her and walked towards her mother.

Pei Lu stretched her neck and found Si Ting and a strange man walking out of the side door of the castle, so she quietly withdrew from the crowd.

Si Ting saw Pei Lu from a distance , and politely said goodbye to the person next to him. Pei Lu trotted towards him, quietly approaching him amid the man's teasing smile. Before he could ask him who this strange man was, he heard the man ask first: " Where did you go just now? "

Pei Lu became excited when this was mentioned, and used gestures to tell Si Ting about Emma's study.

Si Ting listened to her excitedly with a smile and looked at the unusually bright light in her eyes. For some reason, he still felt a little unhappy when he thought of the two of them leaving arm in arm.

Pei Lu thought that she was able to successfully chase her idol thanks to Si Ting, so she chuckled and took out two bookmarks signed by her idol from her small bag.

" This is from Emma. Do you want it? I see you're always reading, so maybe you can use it. "

This was given to her by her idol. In fact, she wanted to take it home and frame it. How could she possibly use it as a real bookmark?

She was just pretending to be polite. She had a sweet smile on her face, but her eyes were clearly giving crazy hints.

Don't take it! You don't need a bookmark!!

Si Ting looked at the bookmark with dried ink on it in her hand, and remembered the beautiful woman who pinched Pei Lu's face with a wicked smile. He raised his eyebrows, said " OK " , and then took the two bookmarks from Pei Lu's hand very smoothly and naturally and put them in his suit pocket.

Pei Lu: "..."

Then, he reached out and pinched her cheek, and said politely: " Thank you. "



Pei Lu: "..."

Q□Q.

At least leave one for me!!!

## Chapter 25

Pei Lu stared at the other person in amazement as she turned and left . Si Ting took a step forward, turned around and saw that she was still standing there, so he asked: " You're not leaving? "

Pei Lu: "..."

Pei Lu wanted to pounce on him and bite him to death.

She was so angry that she was like a dumpling , but in such an open-air occasion , she couldn't really pounce on him and bite him, and then snatch back the things her idol gave her.

She looked at the other person dejectedly , then looked at his pocket , and made up her mind to get the things back when she got home, so she walked over together.

Old Mrs. Dunmore was a person of few words. She looked a little unapproachable , but she was surprisingly amiable when she spoke . She simply said a few words to thank her family for coming to celebrate her birthday , and then everyone started chatting with their drinks.

The wine was not the champagne often used in banquets , but the red wine brewed by the Dunmore family's vineyard. Pei Lu drank a small glass and found the taste very mellow, with a peculiar sweetness under the wine. However, she did not dare to drink more because Li Yeqiu said that the aftereffect of the wine was a bit strong.

In fact, in addition to this kind of wine, there is also sweet wine brewed with flower petals for ladies to choose from, but Pei Lu was not very interested. She picked a few desserts made by the master and ate them happily.

Pei Lu sat with Si Ting and Li Yeqiu. The two of them watched her eat and drink. Li Yeqiu gave Si Ting some tips on the Deng Moer family's network of relationships , and Pei Lu just listened to it as gossip about wealthy families.

While she was eating , someone patted her on the back . She turned around with her cheeks puffed out and saw Emma smiling at her.

" We're going to sit over there, wanna join us? "

Emma pointed to the flower pavilion which was a little distance away from the venue. How could she not go since her idol had invited her? So Pei Lu happily finished the last bite of snack and left with Emma.

Li Yeqiu slumped down in his chair, smiling with his white teeth: " She is really popular. "

Pei Lu looks quite harmless. When she is not angry, she is like a harmless little rabbit. Everyone who sees her wants to pet her. No wonder Emma likes her so much.

Li Yeqiu never asked about the relationship between Si Ting and Pei Lu. He felt that Si Ting would not tell him. He usually guessed on his own based on the two people's extremely natural interactions.

I used to think that these two people were like friends, but they were definitely not ordinary friends. Have you ever seen ordinary friends living together?

Li Yeqiu couldn't figure it out himself, but when he retracted his eyes and shook his empty wine glass, intending to ask Si Ting if he wanted to have another drink together, he saw that the other party was also looking in that direction, looking at the two disappearing figures.

Li Yeqiu sat up straight immediately and wanted to take a closer look, but the other party had already withdrawn his gaze.

But he couldn't be wrong about the look just now; that was the possessiveness a man would show towards a woman he liked.

Although it was fleeting, he still captured it.

At that moment, Li Yeqiu suddenly had a feeling of "as expected" in his heart, but he felt that this inhuman guy himself might not realize how this feeling should be categorized.

Li Yeqiu had evil intentions, and he grinned with his white teeth showing. He said nothing, but poured a glass of wine for the other party.

Really interesting.

Li Yeqiu originally wanted to follow Si Ting's lead, but not long after, Si Ting was asked to leave by the assistant beside the old lady. Instead, Nicholas, who had been busy dealing with guests, sat down in the seat where Si Ting had just sat.

"Why does the old lady want to see him?" Li Yeqiu was puzzled.

How could someone like old lady Dunmore actually be interested in a young man with no background?

As he was thinking this, he saw Nicholas approaching him mysteriously: "We are old acquaintances. Considering our past friendship, can you tell me who he is?"

Li Yeqiu: "..."

Nicholas I really, said can't find out. Could it be that he is one of those big guys who are even more low-key than the Dunmore family? Which duke is he?"

Li Yeqiu: "..."

It's getting really outrageous.

Seeing that he didn't say anything, Nicholas became anxious: "You really can't say it?"

Li Yeqiu: "..."

Li Yeqiu gave him a deep look. Nicholas sat upright, and then he heard Li Yeqiu say, "He's really nothing special."

If the fact that he is not a human being is not counted.

Nicholas retorted with reason: "Do you know why my grandmother wanted to talk to him alone?"

"

"Why?" Li Yeqiu really didn't understand. It couldn't be because he was the one who gave her a gem.

Nicholas said: "My grandmother likes to study history, you know, she sponsored an archaeological team. The fleet has been drifting on the sea for half a year, but they still haven't found the shipwreck they are looking for."

"But when I talked to Si about this, he suggested that I look east and gave me a coordinate."

Mrs. Dunmore should not have believed so easily a young man's casual joke, but she used the magic pearl powder given by the other party.

That little bit of pearl powder made two wrinkles on her face fade away after she woke up, which was something that no matter how much money she spent on skin care, she could not achieve. As their new direction made no progress, the old lady casually suggested that they give it a try. As a result, good news came yesterday that they had discovered a golden statue in the deep sea. It was officially recorded that this was the statue of the king that was brought aboard by the captain.

Li Yejiu listened to Nicholas telling him a story with a wooden face, thinking that even he was fished out of the sea by the other party, he was still a dead man. If the dead can come back to life, then what are you, a statue?

Pei Lu fell into the sweet embrace of the beautiful sister. She was dazzled by the flower-like faces. She even saw her movie idol Ye Ke among the row of beauties.

So she decisively asked for an autograph for her good sister.

No one knew her, but because Emma brought her here, they all treated her like a little sister, just like Emma did, and invited her to have snacks and drink tea. Pei Lu continued to eat while listening to their conversation.

The content of the conversations among the beautiful sisters was quite down-to-earth, they just talked about love and gossip, but they occasionally mixed multiple languages, and Pei Lu could only half understand what they were saying.

They were discussing what new maintenance methods the old lady had used that made her look ten years younger. The old lady was not short of money and she had taken good care of herself. At seventy years old, she looked like a fifty-year-old. She also had a good figure without any signs of fat accumulation. This was already quite a magical thing.

But today, she looks so dazzling that she looks like a middle-aged person!

Pei Lu listened to their conversation silently, listening to how they encouraged the old lady's biological daughter Emma to go over and ask for advice, and also listening to them talking about the latest gossip about the movie queen's recent date with a young hunk.

After a few more words, the actress who was happily sharing her new relationship suddenly changed the subject and joked with a smile: " But I saw a new face here today, and he is more handsome than my ex-boyfriend. "

Unlike the current young male model, Jessica's predecessor was a very manly actor, a typical Western tough guy, exuding hormonal masculine beauty.

Pei Lu thought about the movie actor and disagreed, because Si Ting's muscles were not as exaggerated as those of the movie actor.

But this topic successfully aroused everyone's interest. No one is not interested in handsome guys, so everyone started discussing Si Ting's background.

It was Emma who patted Pei Lu's shoulder with a smile and said to the chattering sisters: " Don't even think about it. Mr. Si and Lulu are a couple. "

Pei Lu: "..."

Then, everyone's eyes turned to Pei Lu.

Just when Pei Lu was about to be caught and skinned by a group of sisters, she was rescued. It was the old lady's assistant who rescued her.

The old lady wanted to get the set of jewelry for her, but Pei Lu didn't quite understand why the empress dowager wanted to give it to her personally.

Pei Lu sat in the room waiting. In addition to the cleanup, she also saw the empress dowager. Pei Lu was a little wary in her heart, but this man was probably the most powerful person she had ever met, and she was afraid of being tricked. She could hear that everyone here was very curious about Si Ting. She came here with Si Ting, and if that man didn't reveal any secrets, he would definitely be targeting her.

Pei Lu felt a little guilty. Sure enough, when Mrs. Dunmore asked her about Si Ting, Pei Lu just said that they were friends.

The old lady didn't make things difficult for her. She just looked at her meaningfully and gave her a skirt.

" I originally wanted to give this dress to Emma, but she's gained weight recently. If you don't mind, you can give it to her. "

The skirt was made by the Dunmore family's tailor. The fabric is an extremely rare pearl satin. The weaving process of this pearl satin is extremely complicated . Only a female worker with ancestral skills in a small town can make it.

The halter dress with a halter neckline is a soft white color, but this light white color will have a pearl blue-pink luster under the light, which is not found in ordinary fabrics. It is very beautiful.

Pei Lu didn't expect that she could get a skirt for free. When she was trying on the clothes, Emma knocked on the door and came in. She saw Pei Lu's face full of surprise .

In fact , she was a little surprised when she was amazed. She didn't know why her mother gave a skirt to a little girl whom she had only met once.

but .....

" It fits perfectly, no need to change the size. "

Emma was also very considerate and helped her adjust the hem of her skirt.

After trying them on, Pei Lu quickly changed her clothes and thanked the old lady. Then Emma smiled and pushed her out of the room. Her idol asked her to go out and play.

Watching Pei Lu disappear into the room, Emma turned to her mother and raised her eyebrows: " What did you find out? "

" Can't I just like her? " Mrs. Dunmore raised her eyebrows at her.

Indeed, no useful information was obtained. Pei Lu was just an ordinary, polite and pretty girl. Si Ting rejected her employment proposal and had no intention of sailing with the expedition team, and she didn't force him. But the more she thought about it, the more she felt that this young man was not simple.

Emma chuckled and shook her head; her mother didn't like children.

" But she was really lovely, and she gave me pearls. "

Hearing this, the old lady who had already left turned around and asked: " What pearls? "

" That's it. "

Emma took out a small box from the small bag she carried with her. The box looked like a small plastic box for pills, but it contained three round pearls.

Emma, who was used to seeing dazzling jewels, didn't see any difference between the three pearls. In fact, she liked the black pearls better.

But before she could say anything else, her mother suddenly raised her hand and took the small box from her: " You haven't given me a birthday present yet, so give me this this year. "

Emma: "..."

???

Pei Lu's trip can be said to be fruitful. When she came back, it was evening. Pei Lu asked the car to stop at the shopping mall. She wanted to buy the popular online celebrity big white goose. Li Yeqiu stayed with them lazily, replying to messages on his mobile phone from time to time, and showed no intention of leaving.

Pei Lu asked curiously: " You are not busy, aren't you the host? "

The Li family is going to hold a banquet tomorrow. Aren't the hosts busy at this time?

" Uncle Gao and the housekeeper are here. "

Li Yeqiu put away his phone, a trace of annoyance flashed in his eyes. Those young masters who used to play together didn't say a word before the will was announced. Not even one of them sent a message to express his condolences.

Now at this time they all came together again. This behavior not only did not make Young Master Li feel gratified, but also made him feel like an idiot.

The old man once said that he himself was not ambitious, so those who gathered around him were all trash. He was not convinced and even talked back to the old man, saying that he didn't understand. In fact, he was the one who didn't understand.

Li Yeqiu has been busy cleaning up his friend list these days. The more he cleans it up, the more he feels like an idiot he was in the past.

He really doesn't have many reliable friends.

Li Yeqiu deleted a few more people and entered the mall with the two of them. The mall was now very lively. Because the three of them had eaten too much at the birthday party, they had no appetite even though it was evening.

Pei Lu, on the other hand, wanted to drink something to relieve her greasy feeling, so she directed Li Yeqiu to queue up. Li Yeqiu then went to queue up carrying the big bag containing Alpha.

Then, Pei Lu pushed Si Ting into the boutique to queue up. Because there were too many people coming to buy the internet-famous big goose, a long line formed outside.

After arranging her tools, Pei Lu went to the floor where cosmetics were sold. She had too few cosmetics, so she had to buy some for herself.

This was not difficult. She just had to buy the ones she liked to use before. She went to several counters, and the salesmen finally sent her away with a big smile. Pei Lu carried a few bags and headed towards the elevator. While walking, she sent messages to the two people to tell them her location.

Then she bumped into someone as she was walking. The blow was not strong, but it scared her. She hurriedly grabbed her cell phone and wanted to apologize to the person, but when she looked up, she saw several familiar faces.

The familiar faces here include the sister group headed by Liu Yuanyuan, who had always been at odds with her, and Pei Mengmeng, who has a close relationship with her.

Several people were also carrying shopping bags.

Liu Yuanyuan had always disliked Pei Lu, and she hadn't seen her since it was pointed out that she was not Pei's biological child.

Liu Yuanyuan secretly resented this for a long time because she really wanted to ridicule the other person in front of him.

She dreamed of seeing Pei Lu again so that she could take a closer look at how arrogant the girl who could usually choke her to death with just one mouth could still be.

Later, Pei Mengmeng became her little follower. She heard a lot of things about her biological parents from her, which made Liu Yuanyuan even more unwilling to accept.

In the end, no one expected that they would meet here.

When Pei Lu saw that the person coming was Liu Yuanyuan, she swallowed the apology that was about to come out of her mouth. She was busy looking at her phone and didn't look at the road ahead. But Liu Yuanyuan didn't have a phone in her hand, so she must have bumped into her on purpose.

"Pei Lu, you don't have eyes. Why did you bump into me? Are you trying to scam me?"

Someone behind her laughed out loud out of courtesy, covering his mouth with his hands in a somewhat sarcastic manner, looking her up and down, with a look of disrespect in his eyes.

However, after this person looked Pei Lu up and down, she found that her situation seemed different from what she thought. The skirt she was wearing was still a new model from the fashion week. She had bought it herself, but she hadn't even got it yet, and Pei Lu was wearing it.

And the bags she was carrying made her look like she didn't need money at all.

Pei Lu was not so polite to Liu Yuanyuan. She said: "Liu Yuanyuan, why are you the same as before? It's been a year, and you've grown smarter with age. You always bump into me. Do you like me?"

Liu Yuanyuan was so angry that she stamped her feet: "Who likes you? Stop flattering yourself. You bumped into me and you haven't apologized yet!"

Pei Lu folded her arms across her chest and looked down at her.

She was taller than Liu Yuanyuan and was wearing high heels today, so even though Liu Yuanyuan looked like she was about to jump up and down, her momentum was reduced by 10%. She said:

"Come on, Liu Yuanyuan, everyone knows that you love to bump into me when you see me. If you keep lying, let's go find the manager and check the surveillance to see who is the scammer."

Liu Yuanyuan was so angry that her face turned red. More and more people passing by here couldn't help but look at them curiously.

Liu Yuanyuan snorted, breathing out through her nose, and said, "I heard that your family lives in Yong'an Town, but you came all the way to Xing City to go shopping."

Before Pei Lu could say anything, the curly-haired girl who opened her mouth first said, "It's useless to buy it. Who would invite her out to play now?"

The person next to him said, "You forgot, Lulu doesn't like to go out and play, she doesn't like this."

The curly-haired girl echoed her: " That's perfect. The Li family is inviting people to play tomorrow, so she doesn't have to go. It's so comfortable to rest at home. "

After saying that, several people covered their mouths and laughed.

Pei Lu: "..."

Pei Lu looked at these people in shock. She really thought that this kind of childish, house-playing drama only existed in TV dramas. As expected, Ye Ke was right. All the dramas were taken from real life.

She was not a soft persimmon that could be easily bullied. Seeing that these people were not stopping, she raised her eyebrows and took a step forward, shocking Liu Yuanyuan so much that she subconsciously stepped back. But before she could say anything, a voice came from behind her: " Why are you still standing here ... Hey, are you catching up with your acquaintances? "

Liu Yuanyuan and the others subconsciously looked towards the owner of the voice, and then they saw that Li Yequ, a member of the Li family who was going to invite people to his home tomorrow, was walking towards the elevator with a bag containing a cat in his left hand and a cup of milk tea in his right hand.

Liu Yuanyuan and others looked over subconsciously, but were a little slow to react.

Li Yequ didn't know these people. They looked familiar, but he couldn't remember their names, so he naturally ignored them. He had a problem of deciding what to eat based on the context. Generally, those whose names he couldn't remember were unimportant people.

So Li Yequ ignored them, walked over and stuffed the milk tea to Pei Lu, and discussed with her: " The grape juice I bought doesn't taste good, I'll drink this, don't tell Brother Ting later. "

Li Yequ accidentally heard Pei Lu call Si Tingting brother. He thought this name was very good because it was neither as stiff as " Si Ting " nor as distant as " Mr. Si " . So Li Yequ came over and started calling him that.

Pei Lu chose mango sago. Si Ting didn't say what he wanted to drink, so Pei Lu made the decision. The best drink that milk tea shop made was mango sago.

But Li Yequ was not like that. Li Yequ was rebellious. He insisted on drinking grape juice. After buying it and taking a sip, he found it too sweet. He curiously tried a sip of mango sago and was unwilling to let it go.

Li Yequ was still trying to get Pei Lu to cooperate with him in " substituting one thing for another " , while Liu Yuanyuan's eyes were wide open and her body was a little stiff.

Isn't this Li Yequ? Why is he here, with Pei Lu, and buying her milk tea!!!

Pei Lu glared at him when she heard this: " Brother Ting won't drink what you left. "

There was a straw stuck in the grape juice. It must be that Li Yequ, that bastard, took a sip and found it unpalatable, so he changed it temporarily.

Li Yequ tried to bribe him, and the next second, Si Ting came.

The man was wearing a suit, the same attire he wore at the banquet. He was not like Li Yequ, who asked Nicholas for a set of casual clothes before boarding the plane.

The suit suits the man's figure and temperament very well, but it looks a bit incongruous for this handsome man to be holding a one-meter-tall white goose.

Li Yeqiu felt a little guilty, but he refused to admit it, so he handed over the glass of grape juice and said with a smile: " Brother Ting, drink this. I have prepared it for you. "

Si Ting knew at a glance that Li Yeqiu had drunk from the straw. There was no special expression on his face, but there was a hint of disgust in his eyes.

Li Yeqiu didn't mind and took two cups by himself.

Pei Lu forgot that she was arguing with someone after being interrupted by Li Yeqiu. She said unhappily, " Go buy another cup. "

The three of them turned and walked towards the elevator. Li Yeqiu was still unhappy and said, " That won't work. There are too many people. We have to queue again. "

Pei Lu was angry: " Who told you not to listen to me in the beginning? "

" Didn't I correct it in time? "

" That's not for you! "

" ... "

The three of them left after arguing, leaving the girls who had held their heads high at the beginning standing there like dumbfounded chickens.

## Chapter 26

The next day, Pei Lu happily put on the skirt given by Mrs. Dunmore.

The skirt was perfectly cut to outline her waistline . She wore her new set of jewelry. The pink color made her skin look even more radiant and healthy. Her smooth hair was tied up in a loose bun , and the bangs on both sides were curled into a curved shape , playfully hanging down on the side of her face.

This made her neck look longer and the set of colorful jewels she wore more eye-catching . When she skipped out of the bedroom, she looked like a fairy who had just returned from picking flowers under the stars and the moon.

Pei Lu turned around in front of Si Ting and asked him happily: " Does it look good? "

Si Ting looked at her quietly and said " hmm " after a while . Although the answer was simple , Pei Lu could hear that he was answering very seriously.

The other person reached out to help her tidy up the loose hair on her temples, and Pei Lu stood there obediently and let him do it for her.

The suit he was wearing should also be newly bought. Ever since she knew that he could put gems and a trash can side by side, Pei Lu knew that he was not short of money, so she didn't ask where the clothes came from . She just reached out and helped him straighten his tie.

She felt that Si Ting learned everything very quickly except his tie, which was either crooked or not tied properly . Pei Lu felt very uncomfortable seeing this. She did not have obsessive-compulsive disorder, but it was awkward to see such a handsome guy in such a neat suit but his tie was not tied properly . It became her habit to help him fix his tie.

Si Ting bent his body slightly and let her do what she wanted. Pei Lu's fingers accidentally touched his Adam's apple, and she felt her fingertips were a little hot.



Although it was not the first time that their skin had touched each other, Pei Lu thought that it might be because they had become more familiar with each other and the other party had not turned back into the dangerous appearance of a mermaid. She now regarded him as a man, so when they touched again ... she felt uncomfortable, right?

She took a step back and looked at him: " Shall we go? "

Li Yeqiu sent a car to pick them up, and they were waiting downstairs early in the morning.

When Pei Lu sat on it, she felt like she was dreaming.

It was as if all the experiences during this period were just a strange dream. When she opened her eyes and woke up, she was still in the Pei family where Zhou Jieyu was. The other party was about to take her to a banquet that she was not very willing to go to.

" What's wrong? " a man's voice came from the side.

The car had already started. Pei Lu turned her head following the sound. Through the black glass, a string of lights outside passed by the window quickly. The light and shadow made the other person's outline particularly charming. In the dark space, those deep eyes had a power that could calm people down.

Pei Lu shook her head, but after thinking for a moment, she leaned closer to the other person, as if this would make her more sober.

Pei Lu took a deep breath and told the truth: " Actually, I don't want to meet my former family. "

It wasn't that she was afraid. Zhou Jieyu and Pei Ruhai hadn't used any harsh methods on her, so she didn't have to stand there arrogantly and say harsh words to them when they met.

I didn't want to do it before, and now that she is living a good life, there is no need to do it.

She thought that it would be best if that family also ignored her and did not interfere with each other.

But that's before she pays back the money.

When she left there, she said that sooner or later she would pay back all the bills that the Pei family had paid for her.

The car stopped in front of the Li family's residence in the suburbs. Si Ting opened the car door for Pei Lu. Pei Lu took his arm, and the two walked into the gate together.

Sure enough, just as Pei Lu thought, she saw many familiar faces as soon as she got off the car. Xing City is still the same Xing City, and the circle is so small, so this situation is normal.

Among these people, some recognized Pei Lu and were very surprised, because the real daughter of the Pei family was also there, having just come with her parents.

They didn't know Si Ting, but looking at the other party's aura and seeing Li Yeqiu personally and warmly stepping forward to greet them, they still made a cautious judgment that the other party might not be from Xing City, but must be an extraordinary person.

Pei Lu's look was so stunning that Zhou Jieyu naturally saw it when she entered the venue. She was accompanying Pei Ruhai at that time.

At this time, the Li family encountered great changes. He wanted to join the game and become a player in the new situation. He did not have the qualifications before, but now it is different.

Now Li Zhiqiu is openly competing with his younger brother. Having lost the advantage of the will, Li Zhiqiu wants to win over everyone he can, so Pei Ruhai is biased towards Li Zhiqiu.

After all, Li Zhiqu has been working in the group for some time. He shares the same opinion as many people that Li Yequ is just an uneducated young master. How can he know how to manage a company?

At this moment, he was excitedly talking to Li Zhiqu's secretary, trying to get the other party to invest in his company's new project, so that both parties could become closer partners. Zhou Jieyu followed her husband appropriately, and the perfect smile on her face completely froze when she saw that familiar face.

She thought she had seen it wrong.

Pei Mengmeng did say that she met Pei Lu, but Zhou Jieyu didn't think much about it. What could happen if they met? Maybe the other party couldn't stand the hard life in Yong'an Town, regretted it, and wanted to come back to find her.

But Zhou Jieyu would not accept her. There was room for negotiation on this matter before, after all, the daughter she raised was indeed beautiful. But after so long, Zhou Jieyu had made up her mind. She thought that even if her former daughter came back to beg her, she would not accept her back. She did not need a disobedient daughter.

Although Pei Mengmeng is not that smart, she is more obedient and better at making her happy. But what's going on? What's the situation now? Why is Li Yequ so warm to them?

Is it because of the man next to her?

Li Yequ took them aside and excitedly introduced to them the new dishes developed by their chef.

" Try this, crispy fish. I don't know how the chef fried it, it's different from what you can find outside. It was originally made for Alpha, but I thought it tasted good, so I asked them to add it to the menu. "

Pei Lu, who was chewing dried fish: "..."

Li Yequ smiled in a very unkind way, but he was still eating.

Li Yequ treated Pei Lu as a little sister. Originally, Pei Lu was the type that he would never actively approach. But after getting to know her, he realized that she actually had a very good personality. She would not flatter you, and was a bit familiar with everyone. She was lazy at heart .

What kind of laziness is that? No matter you are a random homeless person on the street or a rich second-generation from a wealthy family, she is too lazy to change her attitude towards you. Once you get familiar with such people, it is very comfortable to get along with them.

Si Ting was soon called away by Secretary Gao. Li Yequ didn't care what either of them said, and enthusiastically pulled Pei Lu to try the dishes.

Zhou Jieyu had been observing Pei Lu silently. In fact, her first reaction when she saw her just now was that she was hanging out with the man whose arm she was holding.

But Zhou Jieyu knew her very well. She was not sure that the other party was the kind of person who would change herself for money. This was indeed the case. Whether it was the patient attitude of the strange man towards her or Li Yequ's familiar attitude towards her, it was not the treatment a plaything would get.

So Zhou Jieyu fell into deep thought.

What concerned her most was Pei Lu's jewelry set. If that set of jewelry was real, it should have been collected by a great collector abroad. Why would it be worn by her?

Zhou Jieyu discovered it, and naturally others also discovered it. Everyone present was a smart person. They were all amazed that this fake daughter who was once kicked out of the Pei family did not seem to be as miserable as they imagined.

Not only that ...

she .....

It seems that he is richer than before.

Now, everyone looked at the Pei couple with something strange in their eyes.

What does it mean to lose the watermelon and pick up sesame seeds?

Isn't that it?

When Pei Mengmeng and the group of young ladies came back from watching the fireworks show in the courtyard outside, she noticed that the people around her seemed to be looking at her in a strange way.

A girl who had been staying in the banquet hall walked up to her quietly and asked in an inquiring tone: " Mengmeng, has Pei Lu returned to your home? "

Pei Mengmeng had guessed yesterday that something like this would happen today, and she could only deny it with a wooden face.

Pei Lu was taken by Li Yeqiu to try several new snacks. She was a little full now. Li Yeqiu couldn't accompany her all the time. He was no longer the young master who could play whenever he wanted.

After Li Yeqiu left, Pei Lu took a drink and sat in the corner, eating cherries from a plate. She sent a message to Ye Ke, telling him that she had got the autograph of the actress for her. Sure enough, Ye Ke over there expressed his shock with a series of exclamation marks, and screamed and went to buy a ticket home.

Pei Lu laughed so hard at what she saw, but as she laughed she couldn't laugh anymore. Because the bookmark given by her idol is still with Si Ting, and she doesn't know if he is playing dumb or what, but he really didn't return it to her! !

Pei Lu began to hold her chin up and think about how to get her bookmark back. At this moment, a familiar figure walked towards her through the crowd.

## Chapter 27

The person who came was Zhou Jieyu.

Pei Lu only raised her eyes for a moment , then turned her head as if she had realized something. Si Ting happened to be coming down the stairs at the back, with Secretary Gao following closely behind him . If you didn't know , you would think Si Ting was the master of the Li family.

Zhou Jieyu glanced at the man on the stairs who seemed to have a high status , then turned to Pei Lu and said, " Come here with me. I have something to say to you. "

Li Yeqiu had also noticed this place from a distance . He knew about Pei Lu and the Pei family . When he saw Zhou Jieyu walk over on his own initiative, he frowned and something flashed in his eyes , but seeing that Si Ting had already come down , Li Yeqiu ignored it.

Li Yeqiu didn't know what Secretary Gao had said to Si Ting , but he didn't ask . After all, it was related to his grandfather's last wishes. His grandfather would not harm him.

Pei Lu looked at Si Ting again, gave him a reassuring look, and then left with Zhou Jieyu in full view of everyone.

This action made Pei Mengmeng's eyes red.

She is the real daughter of the Pei family. Everyone knows that Pei Lu has been abandoned.

But what does her mother mean now? Calling Pei Lu away in front of others like this, isn't this embarrassing for her?

What will others think of her?

But no matter how she thought about it , she couldn't fall out with the Pei family. Now this couple gave her everything she wanted. Even if she wanted to be free from their control , now was not the time.

Pei Mengmeng has her own plans , and she doesn't think Zhou Jieyu can really coax Pei Lu back . As a mother, she has lived a comfortable life for too many days and doesn't know what it means to bow her head. She will not bow her head to anyone.

As for Pei Lu ...

She had experienced it on the first day, and she didn't think Pei Lu would come back.

Thinking of this, Pei Mengmeng felt relieved again. She really didn't want Pei Lu to have an easy time, and even wanted to find a chance to go back and see what kind of miserable life she was living now. However, she was extremely cautious. Seeing that she was doing well now, she didn't want to cause trouble. Her own foundation was unstable and she couldn't be impulsive. Zhou Jieyu had already left with Pei Lu. The two stood facing each other beside the statue outside the courtyard. In the shadows, Zhou Jieyu's eyes could no longer conceal the complexity . She asked, " Why are you here? "

Pei Lu was not surprised. If Zhou Jieyu really asked her affectionately, " How have you been recently? " , she would have suspected that he was seeing a ghost.

But Pei Lu and Zhou Jieyu didn't come out to reminisce with her, nor did they want to hear her care about them. She just took out a bank card from her bag that she had prepared before leaving, and said:

" When I left home, I said that I was grateful for your kindness in raising me, but I would pay back the Pei family for all the money they spent on me over the years. "

Having said that, she didn't care whether Zhou Jieyu wanted it or not and directly stuffed it into her hand.

Zhou Jieyu's face turned pale. She didn't expect Pei Lu to be so disrespectful to her.

She clutched the card and sneered, " Okay, you're climbing up the social ladder now, and you don't like your original parents anymore? "

She really wasn't surprised at all, as she had never been an obedient child before. Now that the other party had challenged her like this, all the words she had prepared were blocked back and she couldn't say anything nice.

Pei Lu didn't care what she thought at all and turned around to leave.

Zhou Jieyu finally asked what she wanted to ask: " What is your relationship with Li Yeqiu, and who is that man? "

Pei Lu had already turned around and walked a step forward, but when she heard this, she turned back slightly and said, " Mrs. Pei, you should pay more attention to your daughter. "

" Pei Lu ..." Zhou Jieyu called her again with gritted teeth, just like every time she disobeyed her before.

But this time, Pei Lu did not look back.

The couple has already made their choice, so the other party's current behavior is unfair to both her, the fake, and the real person whom she doesn't like. She has no intention of being involved in the whirlpool of these wealthy families anymore. She just wants to live her own life well.

When Pei Lu returned to the banquet hall from the side door, she bumped into someone. She didn't know the person very well. He was tall and thin, wearing a white suit. He was talking to someone with a glass of champagne. He probably didn't expect someone to suddenly rush in from outside, so he kept walking forward.

Pei Lu happened to bump into the other person and soiled his white suit.

" Excuse me ....."

She quickly apologized and looked at the person who came. The other person was also very polite and kept saying it was okay.

Liu Ziming noticed Pei Lu since she entered the venue. There was nothing he could do about it; her lively temperament was too attractive.

She was already beautiful, and she was wearing such special clothes and jewelry. Pei Lu herself didn't realize it, but when she came in with Si Ting's arm just now, she really amazed many people.

Now she apologized while moving closer to look at the stain on the other person's body. Liu Ziming could even count each of her long eyelashes clearly.

Liu Ziming suddenly felt his heart skip a beat.

He has been living abroad for many years, so he is not very familiar with the domestic circles, but he remembers that there was a girl named Pei Lu in the Pei family, not for any other reason, but because his mother said that he might marry that girl in the future.

Liu Ziming understood that this kind of thing was normal, and his parents were a combination of interests. But although he knew it rationally, he still felt a little repulsive in his heart, because of this layer of his heart, he had never deliberately tried to get to know this person named Pei Lu, and had never even seen her photo.

Later, after hearing about the Pei family's affairs, Liu Ziming knew that his fiancée had changed. He even met the other party. To be honest, he didn't like that girl.

" Go ask the host for some clothes to change into. "

Pei Lu thought this was quite serious. If it was black, maybe it could be tolerated, but this large stain was quite obvious on the white clothes, which was very embarrassing.

" Um ....."

As soon as the other party spoke, Liu Ziming suddenly realized that he had been distracted.

He looked at the girl in front of him with a complicated expression, said " hmm " , and comforted her softly: " It's okay. "

When she came in, he was itching to see her. He had already heard from his friends in China that she was Pei Lu, so Liu Ziming felt very complicated .

At this time, the old housekeeper also noticed the situation here. He came over and said politely: " Mr. Liu, please follow me over here ..."

Pei Lu was too modest and the other party didn't care, so she thought the matter was over. However, unexpectedly, Liu Ziming, who had left with the housekeeper, suddenly turned around and called her.

" Ms. Pei. "

Pei Lu turned around.

Liu Ziming smiled at her: " Do you know me? "

Pei Lu was puzzled: " I should know you? "

Liu Ziming suddenly looked behind her, then smiled and said, " I am your fiancé. "

Once upon a time.

His half-joking tone was also a test to test her relationship with her male companion.

After Liu Ziming finished speaking, he turned and left without waiting for Pei Lu to react.

Pei Lu was confused for a moment, then she suddenly remembered something, quickly took out her cell phone, and bombarded Ye Ke with messages.

[Pei Lu] You know Liu Ziming, right? Do you have a photo of him?

Ye Ke replied quickly, but she didn't understand why. She naturally didn't have any photos of Liu Ziming, but she asked Pei Lu to search for Liu Ziming's Instagram .

Pei Lu searched for a while and then choked.

Isn't this her fiancé, the one they had verbally agreed to marry?

But why did this person only say half of what he was going to say? !

Pei Lu was holding her phone and was about to click on the other person's photo when suddenly a shadow loomed over her from behind. Pei Lu inexplicably felt a little cold behind her. Then she turned around with a start and saw Si Ting standing behind her, looking at her with a smile.

His gaze gradually moved downwards and finally landed on her mobile phone. Pei Lu twisted her neck and lowered her head to look at her phone. Her phone was zooming in on Liu Ziming's face.

It was a photo of the other person looking at his phone in the library. He didn't update his Instagram very often, and only occasionally shared some photos of his daily life.

Pei Lu: "..."

" Fiancé? " A voice sounded slowly from above. Si Ting chewed on these words carefully, as if he was learning a strange new word. Although his pronunciation was standard, his tone was very intriguing. Pei Lu felt uncomfortable listening to it.

" He was joking. He must have recognized me. "

Pei Lu recounted what happened in the Pei family in the past.

The other party didn't say anything else, but Pei Lu felt strangely that he was unhappy.

Li Yeqiu had almost finished his work, and seeing that it was almost time to set off the fireworks, he was about to drag Pei Lu and Si Ting to the courtyard to watch the fireworks.

It was pitch black outside, even the moon wasn't very obvious, but it didn't matter, this was a better time to watch the fireworks.

When she came out, she saw Zhou Jieyu frowning and looking at her again, but she ignored him. She held Li Yeqiu with her left hand and Si Ting with her right hand, and walked into the night with the young people in the banquet hall.

As the brilliant fireworks bloomed in the cold night sky, Pei Lu drank a whole glass of cocktail. This lemon cocktail had the sweet taste of sparkling water and was very addictive.

Everyone was obviously much more relaxed in the environment without bright lights. It was very cold outside, so Pei Lu put on her furry shawl with a circle of pink balls on it. Her neck was buried in the fur, half of her face and chin were buried, leaving only a pair of watery eyes exposed.

When the fireworks exploded in the night sky, she turned around and looked at the man standing behind her with a smile, her glass-like eyes shining with colorful light.

Si Ting stared at those eyes intently, and felt that the fireworks reflected in the other's eyes seemed to explode in his heart.

His cold blood suddenly became a little hot, flowing towards the empty chest, as if to ignite a fire there.

He reached out his hand helplessly and slowly covered her eyes.

Pei Lu was still tilting her head back, but suddenly she was covered in it and felt a little dazed.

But then, Li Yeqiu started yelling: " Look! The highlight is coming!!! "

Pei Lu was startled and pulled her hands away from her eyes. But before she could let go, she was stunned by the scene in the night sky.

Two dragons flew up into the black night sky. The red and white oriental dragons circled and met in the sky, spitting out a beam of flame, and then rushed to the higher sky together.

As the fireworks exploded, the dragon swung its long tail and gradually disappeared into the night sky. The crowd kept exclaiming in admiration. Li Yeqiu was about to show off to the sky.

He put an arm on Si Ting's shoulder, stretched his neck and asked Pei Lu: " How is it? "

Pei Lu took another sip of the sweet wine and nodded vigorously.

Li Yeqiu laughed happily.

Pei Lu drank the wine and her body began to warm up. At this time, the slightly cool touch of her other hand seemed very abrupt.

She hesitated for a moment, looked down, and found that Si Ting's hand was still held in hers.

Pei Lu: " QWQ . "

The Li family's banquet ended in laughter. Pei Lu couldn't control herself and felt a little dizzy from drinking. She was helped out by Si Ting.

Her legs and feet were weak and she didn't want to walk at all.

This was the first time she got drunk in her life. She didn't dare to do this before when she was in the Pei family.

This feeling is quite fresh. After all, it makes people relax, and when she is relaxed, she feels like cheating.

But she was still rational and knew that her skirt was very expensive and she couldn't just sit on the ground.

So she glanced with her red lips, drooped her eyes, and stretched out her hand to Si Ting.

" I don't want to leave. "

Liu Ziming didn't notice anything at first, but he still paid attention to Pei Lu intentionally or unintentionally.

When the party was over, he walked out the door and saw his ex-fiancée tugging at the sleeve of the man next to her like a drunk cat.

When Liu Ziming went upstairs to change clothes, he asked the housekeeper about this extraordinary-looking man. Unfortunately, the old housekeeper of the Li family did not say much and just called the other party " Mr. Si " .

At the gate, his former fiancée leaned in and said something to Mr. Si. He turned his head to look at her. The light and shadow outlined their profiles. The two looked at each other. The girl was smiling and the man's expression seemed very gentle.

The next second, the man bent down slightly and picked her up.

" If I had known this would happen, I wouldn't have done it in the first place. "

A familiar voice came from behind. Liu Ziming turned around and saw it was his friend.

This friend is in Xing City. He is no longer in school and is helping out at his family's company. It was Pei Lu who told him this when he asked about her just now.

This friend had told him before that his fiancée was actually very special.

Liu Ziming straightened his sleeves and walked towards the door: " We lack a little fate, but she looks very happy now. "

So it's fate, so let's just wish them all the best. Just look at the atmosphere between the two people where no one can get involved, and you know there's no hope for him.

But Liu Ziming was not too sad. After all, it was just this one encounter. Even if one was attracted to someone he had only met once, it was hard to say that he would never get over it in this lifetime. He would definitely meet someone he liked in the future.

As he thought this, he walked to his car. The black car of the two people in front of him just drove past him.

As the lively party ended, someone uttered a sigh.

Si Ting carried the limp Pei Lu into the car, but Pei Lu refused to get off Si Ting's arm even after she got in.

She was looking for food everywhere in the banquet. She had spilled some wine on herself when she was drinking and watching the fireworks outside just now, so it was inevitable that there was some smell on her body. But she didn't know what was wrong with Si Ting, but he still had that fresh smell on him. Pei Lu didn't know how to describe it. The smell on his body was not fragrant, but very refreshing and a little cool.

She knew that it wasn't quite right to describe the taste as " cold " , but leaning against him like this did make her think of the deep sea.

She sat sideways on the man's lap, her arms hanging on his neck like glue, her head resting on his strong chest. When the car drove to the pointed section of the road, her little head was tilted on his chest.



Si Ting helped her get married again and again.

In the darkness, he looked down at the other person's calm face. Pei Lu should not be asleep, but she was too lazy to move at this moment and was very well behaved.

Si Ting felt a little itchy, so he reached out and pinched her nose.

Pei Lu had difficulty breathing and was angry, so she reached out and grabbed the hair that was fixed on his head. The other person's hairstyle was messed up by him. A few strands of hair hung on his forehead, making the man's rigorous temperament more unruly.

Pei Lu looked up in the dark space and saw the other person looking at her with a smile in his eyes.

Half of her body was numbed by this smile, and her mind became clearer.

So she silently stretched out her claws and pushed herself away a little, wanting to sit aside, but who knew that the other party didn't let go.

Pei Lu then realized that the other person was still holding her waist. It was fine when she didn't notice it, but now she felt as if there was a fire on her waist, and that place was almost roasted.

Pei Lu simply started to pretend to be dead and leaned back into the other's chest again.

But she didn't expect that while she was pretending to be dead, the other party suddenly spoke.

" Liu Ziming. "

He just said the name, but Pei Lu inexplicably felt a little guilty.

" That was all in the past ..."

recounted the story of her " fate " with Liu Ziming.

Si Ting listened but didn't interrupt.

The car stopped in front of the house as they were talking.

Pei Lu twisted her waist awkwardly, which was a little numb now. She had wanted to run away for a long time, so as soon as the car door opened, she rushed out.

However, she didn't expect that their conversation was not over yet. The man who had not expressed his opinion for a long time suddenly spoke slowly from behind.

" In that case ..."

Pei Lu had already jumped down.

Si Ting continued: " Then you are all wrong. He is not your fiancé at all. "

Pei Lu almost sprained her ankle and fell to the ground again.

Why are you so serious? !

## Chapter 28

Pei Lu didn't fall down this time because she was grabbed by someone. Si Ting grabbed her waist from behind, then pulled her up again.

Pei Lu: "..."

This time, Pei Lu didn't reach out to hug her neck . Si Ting held her, entered the password, opened the door , and then carried her into the house.

They now have their own room on the second floor , with a separate bathroom, unlike before in Yong'an Town , where they had to share a room.

Pei Lu rushed back to the house , ran a bath , and cleared her mind.

When she came out wrapped in a bath towel , she realized that she had been in such a hurry that the door to the room had not been closed and was left ajar. Because of this, she could still hear the sound of the man diagonally opposite walking out of the room and making a phone call . Judging from the direction in which the footsteps disappeared, it should be It was towards the study room.

In fact, Pei Lu was also curious about what Si Ting was doing, but she didn't ask. She felt that he could definitely do it well and it would definitely be a surprise.

She also had things she wanted to do, and Si Ting never asked about it.

This situation of having someone by your side, doing your own things silently , and quietly accompanying each other makes people feel very at ease .

After the 15th , schools started to open one after another, and those who started earlier had already returned to school early.

When Li Yeqiu was here before, Pei Lu mentioned that she wanted to buy a car. She mentioned it to Li Yeqiu because this young master had a lot of cars and he liked them.

He kept his car even though he couldn't drive due to health reasons. Now he can also play Fast and Furious, and he buys a new car every day, and no two cars are the same. So Li Yeqiu should be the person who knows the most about cars among the people she knows.

Li Yeqiu was indeed very attentive. He asked about her request and sent her two cars the next day, one red and one white, for her to drive alternately.

This brand is very good at making supercars, but what Li Yeqiu gave her was not a high-profile sports car, nor a serious business car. Pei Lu didn't know much about cars, but she liked it and wanted to pay for it.

" Why give me money? No need to give. " Li Yeqiu waved his hand nonchalantly, " It's just something that happens easily. It's awkward to tell me this. "

Pei Lu was amused by his words: " Even brothers can settle accounts openly. "

Li Yeqiu asked: " If Brother Ting gave it to you, would you still want money? "

" no " immediately flashed through Pei Lu's mind , but she still insisted, " That's different. "

Li Yeqiu teased her: " What's the difference? "

Pei Lu: "..."

Yes, didn't she just say that brothers should settle accounts clearly?

Seeing that she was holding back her anger, Li Yeqiu said with a smile: " If you really want to thank me, the room I stayed in before should be reserved for you. I like it here very much. "

After his grandfather passed away, he and Li Zhiqiu would fight whenever they met. The mansion was empty and he felt depressed. He used to like hanging out with those bad friends and thought it was quite lively, but now he couldn't muster that interest anymore.

Li Yeqiu thought that if he didn't want to be alone in the future, he would come and join these two people.

He also emphasized to Pei Lu seriously: " Don't worry, I am here to join this family, not to break it up. "

Pei Lu: "..."

Pei Lu really liked this car. Because she had discussed it in detail with Li Yeqiu before, even the small details of the car were modified according to her preferences, so she finally accepted Li Yeqiu as a tenant.

Li Yeqiu was also very happy, and took her to test drive the car before his meeting.

After testing the car for a while, he left. Pei Lu drove around the school and then started to get down to business.

The important matter, apart from the start of school, is her and Ye Ke's small studio. The two half-baked bosses just played around during the New Year, and the studio is already in a semi-bankrupt state. The only employee, the little assistant, has been sending messages to them nervously these past two days, asking when they will go to work, for fear that she will be unemployed if the place closes down.

It is not easy to find a job these days. Although their studio is very shabby, Dandan still likes it here because both bosses love her very much. They buy her snacks and milk tea whenever they have nothing to do. If it rains or snows on weekdays and it is inconvenient to travel, they just give her half a day off to let her sleep.

Moreover, the two bosses were about the same age as her, and sometimes the three of them would come up with one idea after another in the middle of discussing something, and then they would just pick up her bag and drag her out shopping.

Dandan is a senior this year and has not officially graduated yet, so she does such an easy job. In fact, she thinks that except for the fact that their company is on the verge of bankruptcy, which is a bit dangerous, she can work here for the rest of her life.

Although she is one year older than the two bosses, they were actually born in the same year, except that she started school a little earlier. Because of this, she felt that there was no gap between her and the bosses, and she was very happy in this class.

In order to appease the assistant, Pei Lu gave her a big red envelope.

The young assistant Dandan felt that this was a sure thing and their small studio would definitely not go bankrupt.

What happened next was even more exciting, because the boss said there was a job to do.

Dandan didn't ask any more questions. After receiving the instructions, he happily went to meet the bosses.

The place where the three people gathered was an ancient town. This ancient town is not big and is a small tourist attraction. It takes about 30 minutes to take the high-speed rail out of Xingshi, and then another 10 minutes by taxi.

Dandan knew that Pei Lu was planning something big, but it was only after she got in the car that she saw what he had just come up with, and she liked it very much.

And saying there are three of them is not actually comprehensive, because they also have an actor, and the actor is the recently popular internet celebrity Tong Sanjin. Tong Sanjin's full name is Tong Xin, a handsome guy with a clean-looking face and a bit shy, but he has a strong plasticity. After putting on the makeup of an immortal and standing there in a long white robe, he is quite intimidating, and he is also a cold and handsome guy.

The heroine is a beautiful girl that Ye Ke brought from the film academy next door. There are so many beauties these days, and it is an era with well-developed Internet, so it is difficult for the

handsome men and beautiful women in the film academy to be remembered, and Jiangjiang is one of them.

Jiangjiang must be good-looking to be able to get into the Film Academy, but there is no shortage of beautiful women these days, and her family is ordinary, so she has only played supporting roles in a few movies, and she hasn't made any waves in her own media. If Ye Ke hadn't found her, she would have planned to change her career.

Jiangjiang wore a light yellow long dress and put on light makeup, looking very charming. Pei Lu did their makeup, and since she couldn't help with anything else, she worked part-time as a makeup artist here.

After everything was in place, she moved a small stool and sat aside to watch with great interest. Their short play is called "The Survival Guide for the Delicate White Moonlight"

But when it is released, this name will definitely not be used. Dandan will choose a more eye-catching title. This is very necessary. After all, this is not a novel.

The pace of the vertical screen short drama is very fast. In the first episode, Jiangjiang wakes up at home and finds out that she is just a cannon fodder Bai Yueguang in a novel. She is a kind and selfless little fairy who has helped many people and finally sacrificed her life to save people.

She dreamed of her own tragic death. She shuddered and rolled off the bed, thinking she could still be saved.

Since they only have two actors now, but Jiangjiang has a foresight that she will meet many different men in her dream, Pei Lu decides to take charge of this dream herself.

She observed for a while and made sure that there was really nothing to do, so she took out her tablet and started painting.

Anyway, the positioning of the studio is to be poor, so we might as well roll up our sleeves and get to work with confidence.

First, let's talk about the first dream. Jiangjiang dreamed that when she was running around, she accidentally saved the Immortal Lord who was seriously injured by the Demon Lord. She began to flee with the Immortal Lord. They were chased and blocked along the way and suffered a lot of injuries, but she finally escaped with the cold Immortal Lord.

Pei Lu drew a picture of a little girl in white clothes with a big stroke of her brush. She really didn't have much talent for drawing. She had once played the game of guessing with her roommates and was even awarded the title of "Soul Painter". Her roommate excitedly praised her for her "strong personal style, better than my cousin in kindergarten".

So in her writing, the little fairy Jiangjiang wears a white dress, a high ponytail, and a pink bow, which represents the heroine.

Then what about the Immortal Lord? His clothes are light blue, and he has a small bun on his head with two white ribbons floating on it. This is the Immortal Lord.

The first picture shows Jiangjiang bending down to save the Immortal Master. Pei Lu also drew some wild flowers and weeds on the roadside. The second picture shows Jiangjiang running away holding the Immortal Master's hand. In order to show that the Immortal Master was seriously injured, Pei Lu drew some red on the corners of the Immortal Master's mouth, indicating that he vomited blood.

In the third painting, the Immortal Venerable went astray due to his spiritual practice and accidentally injured Jiang Jiang. This time, the one with red lips became the heroine. Pei Lu was very satisfied with the painting after she finished it, and she sent it to Li Yeqiu and Si Ting for them to appreciate it .

Si Ting replied quickly, but he left a question mark. Li Yeqiu who came after him was more direct. He replied with a whole string of question marks and told her not to draw if she couldn't. Pei Lu was happy, and she was working on her artistic creation while she was happy.

The Demon Lord is even simpler, with frizzy red hair. After she was drawn, she looked like a Shamatte no matter how you looked at her .

But let 's just be Shamatte , Shamatte is also good.

When Dandan came back to get props, she saw Pei Lu sitting quietly on a small stool drawing. She was wearing a white down jacket with a fur collar, with most of her face hidden under the fur collar. She looked well-behaved. Dandan quietly circled around her from behind, trying to scare her from behind.

But when she walked behind Pei Lu and saw her painting, she was stunned.

At once .....

At first glance, it's ugly.

On second glance, well ... a little weird.

After a while ...

How strange! Let me take another look.

So Pei Lu finished painting, but Dandan still didn't move.

Pei Lu finally realized there was someone behind her. She turned around and saw Dandan still looking at her painting, so she smiled with her small white teeth: " Is it good? "

Dandan: "..."

What should I do? My boss asked me a question but I really can't praise myself QAQ .

Pei Lu understood what was going on when she saw the other person's indescribable expression. She snorted and turned her head away: " This is called art! "

Dandan: "..."

I see. The studio is indeed going to close down.

When the five people finished a day's filming, Pei Lu even arranged to treat everyone to a meal.

Tong Sanjin and Jiangjiang are both very talkative people, Ye Ke is also a chatterbox, and with Dandan, a social expert, they can turn a dinner for five people into a party for twenty people.

Pei Lu was usually quite eloquent, but she was totally out of her depth when facing these people. She could only listen while eating.

It was already dark at this time, and the ancient town was lit up with red lanterns. Looking out the window, it was like traveling through time and space.

Tong Sanjin had other work arrangements, so he said goodbye to everyone and left after dinner.

Ye Ke was so excited that he wanted to drag Dandan to work overtime. Dandan was so tired during the winter vacation. Pei Lu gave her a New Year's red envelope of 1,000 yuan yesterday, so she thought it was okay to work a little overtime, and left with Ye Ke on the high-speed train.

Pei Lu wanted to go with them, but Si Ting said he would come to pick her up, so Pei Lu thought about it and decided to stay here. She planned to show him this ancient town. He must have

never seen such a place. Seeing it on TV is different from walking in the long street full of red lanterns in person.

There was no wind tonight, so the weather was pretty good. As school was about to start, many college students had time to hang out together. When Si Ting found Pei Lu, she was standing in front of a stall, gesturing to the owner.

The owner was probably amused by her and gave her a small pendant.

Pei Lu turned around holding the lantern and saw the man walking towards her. She ran towards him with a happy smile. The red light reflected on her cheeks and her white down jacket red. Si Ting watched from afar and suddenly felt that the person running towards him was actually a little sun.

Pei Lu ran up to him, panting, and pushed the thing in her hand to him.

Si Ting looked down and saw two lotus flowers with a small candle in the middle of the flower. He didn't know what they were used for.

Pei Lu took him to take a boat ride, and the boatman rowed them to the river. When Si Ting saw the flowers floating in the river, he immediately understood.

" Write down your wish, " Pei Lu handed him a pen, then bent down and quickly wrote something on the note.

Si Ting didn't know what his wish was. He remembered the strange matchstick man that Pei Lu had given him during the day. She had drawn a little girl on the piece of paper and some grass on top of the matchstick man's head.

Those little blades of grass were exactly the same as the hairpin on Pei Lu's head, which she bought for herself before getting on the boat. There were a few slender green sprouts on her head, and the green leaves on the top were fluorescent. Whenever she moved, the little blades of grass in her hair swayed around, which looked quite cute.

After Pei Lu finished writing, she turned her head towards him with a smile, and the tender grass on her head moved along with her head. Si Ting tried to hold back for a moment, but couldn't help it and reached out to fiddle with her hairpin.

Pei Lu sat next to him at the bow and asked curiously, " What wish did you write? "

Si Ting raised his eyebrows and said to her: " Didn't you say that wishes won't come true if they are spoken out loud? "

Pei Lu pouted unhappily and said, " It's okay to say it occasionally. "

But Si Ting didn't say anything.

Pei Lu hummed and hawed as she put the lantern into the water with him.

Two beautiful lotus flowers swayed and bumped into each other in the water, then their petals hung together and floated away together. Pei Lu took out her mobile phone and took a photo of the two lanterns that were floating farther and farther away . Then she turned on the front camera, took a selfie of herself, and cleverly included Si Ting in the photo.

The man found that the other party had included him in the camera range and did not hide, so in the photo, a girl made a face, and behind her was a handsome profile with his eyes slightly lowered, looking at the river.

Pei Lu herself was very satisfied with this photo.

The two got off the boat and prepared to go back. The car was parked at the door. It was similar to the one Li Yequi sent to pick them up yesterday, but also different.

Pei Lu asked curiously: " Is this also Li Yequi's car? "

" no. "

The car passed through the city, and Si Ting pointed to a building and said, " I was there when you sent me a message. "

The third floor of that landmark building was occupied by a large local investment company, which went out of business due to debt problems a few years ago. It was the first chess piece that Si Ting set his eyes on.

The boss of the company was very satisfied with the price offered by Si Ting, so even though there were still a lot of procedures to be completed, the other party still gave the car to him.

Pei Lu leaned on the car and looked at the rising city. She suddenly felt that the other party had adapted very well and seemed to have integrated into the life here.

Hearing the other party say that he would come here tomorrow and would not go back for a few days, Pei Lu felt a little complicated . She felt that according to the other party's learning ability, he didn't seem to need her particularly, and sometimes she still had to be taken care of by him. But when she opened the progress bar left by the system in her mind, it still showed " 5%" lifelessly , without moving at all.

Because the other party behaved too normally, Pei Lu often overlooked that this was still a task. So what else can we do? Wouldn't letting the other person integrate into the lives of ordinary people be considered a way to make him a better person?

Pei Lu frowned and looked at him.

Even though the light was not good, Si Ting could clearly see the expression on her face, so he asked in confusion: " What's wrong? "

Pei Lu asked: " Do you like starting a company? "

Si Ting did not answer this question, but asked instead: " What's wrong? "

Pei Lu didn't mention the progress bar. She was really curious. She felt that the other party didn't seem to care much about money.

" Just asking ..."

The man turned his head towards the night outside and said " hmm " .

But how could he be interested in these things? In those countless days, every dispute was for worldly things.

He just seemed to suddenly know how to break the curse on him.

Because every time he touched Pei Lu, his empty chest would become numb and itchy, and he realized belatedly that his abandoned heart was reviving.

The revival of the heart will make the curse that has become one with him become violent.

However, if the curse was really dispelled, without the evil power supporting his body, he would be just an ordinary sea creature.

He has lived for so long that people of his age would have long since turned into mud on the seabed, so when the power of the curse dissipates, he will turn into a handful of dirt here.

This is what Si Ting judged.

So his usually calm mind has been very complicated recently .

He didn't understand the love between lovers in this world, but the little girl who was the first one he saw when he opened his eyes in this strange world was like a little flower he met in the dead sea trench.

A vibrant life that shouldn't be blooming there.

She shouldn't have shown up, but she did, and she brought herself something different.

So he wanted to hide the flower.

But he can only see this flower, and this flower does not belong to him alone.

She has been getting busier recently, and she would excitedly tell him about her plans, her friends, and her future life.

He was in those plans, but he was not the only one.

He couldn't, really, pluck this flower that was trying to reach the sunlight as he wished, and leave it in his dark trench, leaving her only to look at him.

Therefore, he could only try to stay away from her, and he could only keep running outside.

Seeing that he didn't answer her, Pei Lu moved closer to him unhappily.

Before she could get close to him, the man suddenly reached out and pressed a finger against her forehead.

## Chapter 29

Pei Lu was poked on the forehead . She stared at him for a long time in the narrow carriage, but still silently retracted her neck.

The moment she looked into the other person's eyes, her heart beat a little faster.

Pei Lu felt that something was wrong with her.

So all of a sudden , the car became quiet.

Because she was busy all day , Pei Lu fell asleep as soon as she lay down even though she had something on her mind. She slept until nine o'clock the next day . When she turned on her cell phone , the long-lost dormitory group kept ringing. Her roommates had all returned to school and wanted to make plans to go out for dinner together.

Her relationship with her roommates was actually pretty good . They would chat about gossip when they got together and occasionally go out for dinner , but it wasn't that good . For example, during this winter vacation, everyone just wished each other well in the small dormitory group.

Among the six-person dormitory, there was one who had a particularly good relationship with Pei Lu, but as soon as the winter vacation started, she followed her father who was going to teach in a remote area. That place was really remote , and it took three hours of walking on the mountain road to reach the nearest town to make phone calls and surf the Internet, so she even received the New Year's greetings a few days late.

Pei Lu turned over, replied to the message, and then got up.

As soon as she opened the door , she subconsciously looked at the door diagonally opposite her. She slowly walked over and knocked, but no one answered.

Pei Lu clutched her phone and ran downstairs to the entrance to check , and sure enough, the coat that the other person had been wearing recently was gone.



Pei Lu's little head drooped down , and she didn't know why she was so depressed.

She curled up on the sofa and opened Si Ting's chat box , not knowing what to say. It was not until Ye Ke called her and asked her to go to the studio that she stood up from the sofa, wiped her face, and left with energy.

She drove the new white car as soon as she went out. When her car arrived downstairs of the studio, she met Ye Ke who was out buying breakfast. Ye Ke had dark circles under his eyes and was holding a bowl of millet and pumpkin porridge. At first, he was yawning listlessly.

When he saw the car coming, he just stood there in a daze. When he saw the person getting out of the car, he screamed " Ah " and rushed over.

Pei Lu asked her: " Didn't we agree to come this afternoon? "

Ye Ke circled the car several times and tried to grab the car keys, but she gave up after thinking about her current dazed state. When she heard Pei Lu asking her, she said, " Actually, I came last night. I couldn't sleep. "

Pei Lu put a straw into the millet and pumpkin porridge and put it back into her hand, then said, " It's so curly, Boss Ye. "

Ye Ke was happy: " I have edited two episodes, let me show you. "

Pei Lu walked in and watched a one-minute short film. The little fairy Jiang Jiang was lying on her bed and had a nightmare. In the dream, Pei Lu's Shamatte stickman pictures were " pa pa pa " appearing on the screen. In the end, she dreamed of her own death. She sat up in shock from her dying illness and began to save herself.

She went out to help her master collect herbs as usual, and sure enough, she met the man in blue in her dream in the mountains.

The other person was dying and looked like he only had one breath left.

Tong Sanjin's appearance is quite three-dimensional, but because of the makeup, his already good-looking face looks pale and broken.

A handsome guy was lying on the grass dying. Jiang Jiang approached him carefully and touched his face.

The Immortal Venerable vaguely felt that someone was approaching him. He frowned and tried to open his eyes to ask for help, and his men subconsciously wanted to catch that person.

He seemed to see a lively little fairy, but he didn't know why the other person was here.

The other person patted his face worriedly, and he finally tried hard to open his eyes. His clothes looked cold, but there was a different light in his eyes.

One of the two people was lying there, the other lowered his head in worry, as if everything in the world had stopped, and silent love quietly rose in that moment.

Immortal Lord saw that the other party put down his face again, took a step back, and ran away without looking back .

As for the Immortal Venerable, his wounds were torn open due to the violent impact and he spat out a mouthful of blood on the spot.

Ye Ke's grasp of the rhythm was perfect, and the music was also well chosen. The performances of the two actors were weird and funny. Although Pei Lu knew the plot early on, after all, she wrote it herself, she still repeatedly pulled the progress bar and watched it several times.

In the second episode, Jiangjiang ran away, but the cold and arrogant immortal had a strong desire to survive. After spitting out a mouthful of blood, he directly grabbed her long skirt. Jiangjiang was pulled backward and almost fell to the ground. She was so angry that she asked him to let go.

There were people chasing her from behind. The little fairy was soft-hearted after all, so she could only drag the Immortal Master away. However, she did not dare to bring the Immortal Master back to her master's sect as she did in her dream. She directly dragged the Immortal Master to the nearest town and hid such a big Immortal Master in the chicken coop of a farmhouse.

The pursuers passed through the town but didn't find the Immortal Lord. Jiangjiang had a strong desire to survive, so he threw the person away and ran away.

The always respectable Immortal Master was discovered by an old lady in a farmhouse. The old lady picked up the seriously injured Immortal Master and insisted that he was a thief who stole chickens.

Pei Lu laughed so hard that she fell under the table.

The next episode is that the seriously injured immortal is forced by the aunt to pay off his debt with sex in the tavern she owns.

After escaping, Jiangjiang will live a peaceful life for a few days and will soon enter the story line of the Demon Lord.

In Pei Lu's subsequent scripts, the other party cheated the boss several times in this way, and the white moonlight turned into the black moonlight. Then, at the birthday banquet of the Emperor of Heaven, she met the big boss who had been cheated by her at the same time, and the birthday banquet turned into a large Shura field.

Pei Lu slammed the table and urged: " Don't sleep tonight, edit another episode! "

Ye Ke: "..."

Ye Ke ignored her, waited for Dandan to come over, handed over the work in his hands, and then went to catch up on his sleep.

Dandan was also very happy after reading it. She said: " This one of ours will definitely work! "

After saying that, he took the lead in releasing the video on the most popular short video platform.

Their studio account has a fan base, and Dandan has always been in charge of this account. The name of the studio is " Against the Light " . At the beginning, it released some work news about the tablet. As a result, one time, Dandan used the official account to reply to something under a video.

The video was a complaint video of a young lady after she was driven crazy by work late at night. The video immediately became a hot topic because it was so realistic, and there were a lot of complaints from poor workers about their bosses below the video.

Dandan couldn't help but start showing off how good her bosses were. After she replied, she realized that she had forgotten to switch accounts.

But her reply had already become popular, and when Ye Ke saw it, he smiled and said there was no need to delete it. As a result, Dandan received private messages from a group of people that day, jokingly asking her to prove it.

So Dandan posted a series of daily studio life, including being told by her boss to sleep well in the dormitory on rainy days, and suddenly going out to go shopping and eat barbecue in the middle of work.

Then netizens suspected that this company was fake, but they actually had an office. Although no one showed their faces, it could be seen from the video that the equipment and computers were all in good shape.

So everyone was dissatisfied and strongly demanded that the rich boss fire the assistant and replace him with them! !

In short, when this small account with 50,000 followers posted two videos in a row, some fans immediately noticed it.

This fan thought the assistant was giving out some annoying employee benefits again, but when he looked, huh?

Why is the style of painting different this time?

Huh? Ancient costumes? Is this a small theater?

Help, why is this painting so casual?

Help, what is this plot??

Help why it's so short!!

Still want to see!!

The number of likes on the video soared. Dandan, who was confident but still uneasy, sat there and watched the number of likes on the comments soar and their video become popular. He finally breathed a sigh of relief.

Over there, Pei Lu stayed in the studio for a while and then went back to school. School would start tomorrow, and her roommates wanted to go out for dinner together. Also, her best roommate had finally returned from the mountains.

When Pei Lu saw her, she almost didn't recognize her. The conditions outside were bad. Not only had Fang Yunzhu lost weight, but her cheeks were also dry due to the cold wind there. Even so, there was a brightness in her eyes that had never been there before, and it was obvious that she had a very satisfying holiday.

As soon as Pei Lu came back, Fang Yunzhu started talking to her nonstop. Pei Lu stuffed her with a bunch of delicious food and listened to her saying that she also wanted to go out and teach for two years after graduation.

Everyone was almost ready, and after a few people discussed it, they decided to go out for a barbecue. It was the beginning of the school year, and classes had not officially started yet, so there were quite a lot of people outside, many of whom were like them, coming out to eat together. As soon as they entered the door, they saw the same person, Chen Lang.

Chen Lang didn't expect to meet these junior high school girls here, especially Pei Lu. After not seeing her for a holiday, she seemed to be even more beautiful.

Chen Lang didn't mean to be cold to the other party. He was indeed interested in Pei Lu, but he could tell that the other party was not interested in him. In that case, there was no point in chasing her.

Chen Lang himself is an excellent person. Many girls usually express their affection for him. However, he is a proud and arrogant person and does not like to please others. So he thought that if he couldn't catch up, it would be fine to just stay like before and be ordinary friends.

He comforted himself this way throughout the winter vacation and was intentionally keeping his distance .

But when he saw the other person here, his quiet heart began to beat again.

Chen Lang felt like he still couldn't let go.

Everyone on both sides knew each other, so they sat together very naturally and changed the table to a larger private room.

There were so many people and it was lively, so soon everyone started chatting together. Fang Yunzhu also talked about his trip outside during the winter vacation, which amazed everyone.

After eating, everyone wanted to play script- killing again . The girls had no objection and responded actively. Pei Lu didn't want to go. She wanted to go back to the studio. She just received a message saying that their video became popular.

But since everyone was going, she didn't want to spoil the fun, so she just followed suit and started watching the script again .

As a result , the killing lasted the entire afternoon. Chen Lang took the opportunity to sit next to Pei Lu and talk to her whenever he had time.

Pei Lu didn't get into the state at the beginning, but with the help of everyone, he became active. The killing lasted for four hours and it was almost time for dinner.

Pei Lu was just about to seriously pull someone out for a private chat when her cell phone rang. When she saw it was Si Ting, she wanted to answer the call, so she apologized to everyone and ran to the corner to answer the call.

Over there, they were arguing over who the murderer was, and it sounded very noisy.

Fang Yunzhu said that the murderer was Pei Lu, and Chen Lang said it was Fang Yunzhu. As a result, a group of people began to tease Chen Lang, saying that he was on Pei Lu's side and that there was a hint of ambiguity between his words.

Everyone knows that Chen Lang is interested in Pei Lu.

When Pei Lu picked up the phone, there was a sigh from the other end. Si Ting frowned when he heard the voice.

" Where are you? "

" Ah? " Pei Lu couldn't quite hear the other person's voice, so she spoke with some effort, " I'm playing outside. "

Si Ting was silent for a while, the awkward feeling in his heart became stronger and stronger.

The voices of men and women on the opposite side mixed together, and it seemed very lively.

Pei Lu didn't talk to him the whole day. Si Ting thought that she might be sad, so he deliberately avoided her. So they didn't even have breakfast together. In the past, they at least had breakfast together.

Si Ting hadn't been concentrating on his work the whole day. He originally called to tell Pei Lu that he would not be going home tonight. He had to keep a distance from her so that he would think less about her.

But Si Ting didn't expect that Pei Lu, the heartless girl, was not at all sad because of his absence. She seemed to be even happier.

This flower really has a lot of sunshine willing to surround her, even without him.

His staying away from here meant to her that there was one less monster coveting her.

Si Ting frowned. He sat alone in the bright office. Under the shadow cast by the cuffs of his suit, a few black scales crawled onto his pale skin.

His chest felt a little stuffy, and the curse attached to his body noticed it. They were fighting against each other.

It seemed like there was someone over there making a fuss, saying something about Chen Lang.

Is it that senior?

Si Ting's originally gentle expression darkened, the calmness in his eyes slowly sank, and a hint of dark light emerged.

Pei Lu thought about what he said yesterday. He said he seemed to be busy in the next city for a while, so she asked: " Aren't you coming back today? "

Si Ting was silent again.

That's what I was going to say.

Pei Lu covered the phone, feeling a little strange when she saw that the other party didn't speak. On the other side, Chen Lang saw that she kept answering the phone, so he came over and asked with concern: " Is it urgent? Can I take you home? "

" Senior, please don't talk nonsense! " Pei Lu's roommate laughed and joked, " We haven't finished playing yet, you just want to take Lulu away! "

Si Ting: "... "

The man spoke, his voice getting heavier.

" No, I'll go back tonight. "

Pei Lu uttered an " ah " , remembering that she had gotten up so early and didn't see anyone, and hummed, " Then go back and make dinner for yourself. I'm not going back. "

Si Ting: "... "

Pei Lu added: " I won't go back to sleep either. "

Staying in the dormitory today.

Si Ting: "... "

## Chapter 30

Pei Lu wanted to say more , but the group of people behind her started calling her.

So Pei Lu said again: " I won't tell you yet, they are calling me! "

She herself didn't realize that there was a smile on her face as she said this , as if she was a little proud.

After saying that , she hung up the phone.

Si Ting: "... "

Fang Yunzhu saw her smiling so brightly, so she asked her: " Who are you talking to on the phone ? You look so happy? "

Pei Lu didn't say anything , just winked at her, and Fang Yunzhu became more interested.

Fang Yunzhu joined in the laughter, and the people around him joked, " What nonsense !

Senior Chen is still here. "

Fang Yunzhu was a carefree person . He was just joking with Chen Lang just now , and now he said bluntly: " What's wrong with Senior Chen being here? "

Isn't this a case of the relationship between a man and a woman not being determined yet?

She herself was sometimes confused . If you say that Senior Chen likes Pei Lu, he seems to have pursued her, but she always feels a little strange, and feels that he is distant. Didn't Pei Lu just say that the two of them didn't contact much during the entire winter vacation ? Is he really pursuing someone?

When she said this, something flashed across Chen Lang's face, and then he looked at Pei Lu kindly: " Is he really my boyfriend? "

The tips of Pei Lu's ears turned a little red under her long hair, but she still shook her head.

Everyone was still trying to catch the murderer , so this little episode was just discussed for a few sentences and then passed.

killing store contentedly , and another group went to eat barbecue.

In fact, Pei Lu was already a little tired and didn't really want to go.

She originally thought that she could return at noon . She had already wasted an entire afternoon , but she didn't expect that this group of people would not stop.

Seeing that she was about to leave, Fang Yunzhu pulled her and said, " Let's go. It's rare to have such a lively time. You don't know what kind of life I have been living in the valley for more than a month. Just think of it as accompanying me! "

Pei Lu looked at her askance: " For someone like you, you'll have to go for two more years.

You'll be crying with envy. "

Fang Yunzhu was amused by her and laughed.

" What are you talking about? You look so happy. " Chen Lang slowed down a few steps and walked over to the two people.

Fang Yunzhu said with a smile: " Nothing. By the way, seniors, have your internships ended? Have you started looking for jobs? "

Chen Lang nodded.

Fang Yunzhu asked again with interest: " What kind of job are you planning to find? "

Chen Lang also smiled and said: " I sent my resume to Pei's, but I don't know if I will be accepted. "

In fact, he invested in many companies, and even invested in Li's. It's always right to cast a wide net, but he might not be qualified for a company like Li's, so he only mentioned Pei's.

" Wow! That's hard! "

Fang Yunzhu couldn't help but sigh.

Pei's is indeed not a small business in Xing City.

Chen Lang smiled.

took a small step away quietly .

How can I hear such unlucky things while eating barbecue?

Pei Lu studied here for three years and never talked about her family. Everyone just thought that her family conditions should be relatively good, but they never knew that the Pei family behind her was actually the Pei family that was quite prosperous in Xing City.

Chen Lang smiled modestly and said, " Don't tell anyone. I haven't even started yet. I haven't told anyone. "

Fang Yunzhu smiled and made a gesture of zipping up his mouth.

Chen Lang looked at Pei Lu and said, " It's time for you to do your internship. If you don't want to accept the school's arrangement, you can come to me. I have accumulated some connections that I should be able to use. "

Chen Lang didn't mention it either. Pei Lu had already forgotten about the internship, but it was easy to handle. She could go to the studio to get the stamp when the time came.

Chen Lang's words were obviously directed at Pei Lu, but Pei Lu just smiled and said , " I have my own plans . " Chen Lang couldn't help feeling frustrated.

He did have a good impression of Pei Lu, but the other party's lukewarm attitude always made him feel frustrated.

They just said these few words and arrived at their destination. They were lucky because as soon as they arrived, a table of students who also came for dinner were about to leave.

Everyone was talking and laughing around a table. Pei Lu received a message from Si Ting, saying that the other party was already on his way back.

Pei Lu smiled and took a photo of him.

Fang Yunzhu couldn't help but come closer and ask, " Who are you chatting with? Why do you smile as soon as you pick up the phone? "

Pei Lu touched her face and denied: " No. "

Fang Yunzhu said: " Come on, I should bring you a mirror to look at. "

Pei Lu stuck out her tongue and put away her phone. Since she was already here, she might as well make the best of it. There was no way back now, so she might as well order some delicious food to fill her stomach first.

Before eating, she quietly opened the app and took a look. Their video was still popular. In just half a day, the studio's account gained 50,000 followers , and now it has 100,000 fans.

According to Dandan, their private messages have exploded and they can't keep up.

In other words, they became popular.

Pei Lu was a little excited, so she didn't refuse when everyone suggested drinking some wine. She was happy.

But she couldn't drink much, and her cheeks turned a little red after drinking just one can.

Seeing that she was addicted to the juice and wanted to open another bottle with her eyes wide open, Fang Yunzhu decisively put the juice into her hands.

Everyone was already drunk, and a few of them were pulling each other to continue the party, wanting to go to another bar.

Although Pei Lu felt a little dizzy, she was not completely irrational. She really didn't want to go. Fang Yunzhu didn't like that place either. There was also a quiet and weak girl in the dormitory who hesitated and said she was tired and wanted to go back to the dormitory directly.

Seeing this, Chen Lang said, " Then I will send you back. "

Fang Yunzhu quickly waved his hand: " It's so close, just a few steps away, senior, go and play with everyone. "

Chen Lang insisted on sending a few people back, and even reached out to pull Pei Lu: " You all drank, I am worried about this. "

Pei Lu took a step back to avoid the other person's hand, but just like the last time at the Li family's banquet, her hands and feet became weak after drinking. She staggered and tried to hold onto the table next to her, but the person behind her held her first.

Pei Lu looked down at the hand that was holding her arm from behind, was stunned for a moment, then raised her head.

The people here, like her, all raised their heads and looked at the person who came.

The other party's expensive suit and restrained elite temperament were out of place in this barbecue stall and the students in casual clothes inside. Chen Lang, who was closest to Pei Lu, felt this particularly obvious. He subconsciously wanted to step back because he felt a dangerous sense of oppression.

" Have you been drinking? " Si Ting didn't like the messy smell here, especially when he got closer, he saw Pei Lu's slightly flushed cheeks.

Pei Lu let out an " ah " in a daze, not quite understanding.

Isn't this person in the next city and won't come back?

" You've had too much to drink. Let's go home early. "

Fang Yunzhu was the first to react and asked boldly: " Sir, you are ..."

Si Ting looked at Fang Yunzhu and politely introduced himself, " I am Si Ting. "

That's not what I want to ask! ! Fang Yunzhu roared.

She wanted to ask about this person's relationship with Pei Lu.

Pei Lu had forgotten what she had just said about living in the school, and explained slowly: " This is my ... brother ..."

Everyone's eyes became a little strange.

Chen Lang looked at Si Ting, then at Pei Lu, and said with a forced smile: " Is that so? Then go back and rest early. "

Pei Lu was dragged away in a daze. When she was put into the car, she looked through the glass at the group of roommates who were still standing there looking at her. She slapped her head and looked at Si Ting again, " Why are you here? I said I'm not going back. "

She planned to stay in the dormitory today.

Si Ting pulled down the tailgate of the car, then turned around and brushed away the messy hair on her forehead: " Didn't you say you wouldn't live in the dormitory? "

On the first night of moving into her own house, she gestured happily to the other party, saying that with this place, she would no longer have to live in the dormitory.

Their dormitory is a standard six-person dormitory, but because it is an old campus, the dormitory is relatively old and the electrical circuit is fragile, so high-power electrical appliances



cannot be used. The bathroom is at the end of the corridor and is shared. There is no independent bathroom, and taking a shower is not very convenient, so when there are better options, no one wants to go back.

The other person leaned a little close when he spoke, and Pei Lu felt a little awkward. She felt that Si Ting was a little strange today. He usually sat very upright when he spoke.

But the car door was behind her, so she had nowhere to hide and could only reach out and push him away: " Didn't you say you were busy? I thought you wouldn't be back. It would be boring for me to live alone if you didn't come back. "

Si Ting was stunned.

Pei Lu counted on her fingers and turned the pages with him: " Also, you left without saying a word this morning, but I at least informed you. "

The man paused for a moment, then sat up straight: " It's my fault. I won't do it again. "

Looking closely, there was a hint of regret in his eyes.

He tried to stay away from the other person's thoughts, but it seemed that just as his teeth sprouted, something quietly pushed him back into the mud.

At this moment, his heart was filled with a more thrilling feeling of excitement.

Si Ting always looks decent, but in fact he is just a savage and evil mermaid. The sinful blood of conquest and plunder flows in his bones, and he does not have much restrained kindness in his heart.

Just now, when he got off the car, he saw the man next to Pei Lu trying to reach out to pull her, and he stared at the man's hand and actually had an urge to crush his bones.

So Si Ting sighed in his heart.

" Lulu. "

Pei Lu was still slumped in the chair in a daze. When she heard the man calling her in a low voice, her ears began to itch again.

She slowly turned her head and looked at him.

" He is your senior? "

Pei Lu felt like she was really drunk. The other party seemed to reach out and touch her face again. Moreover, there seemed to be a little familiar black light on his wrist, like scales.

" Um ..... "

It must be the senior.

But today she felt a little annoyed that everyone was always making fun of them, and she thought it would be better to find an opportunity to make things clear.

Pei Lu was sitting in the smoothly moving car and felt a little sleepy. After the other party asked this question, she kept silent. When she was about to fall asleep, the car finally stopped in front of her house.

Pei Lu got off the car and vaguely remembered, " How did you find me ... "

This person has never been to a university town.

Of course Si Ting found the location by looking at the photos she sent, but when he saw the other person's still somewhat dizzy eyes, he suddenly grinned.

It was not a gentle smile, and Pei Lu felt a little frightened by it.

Then she heard the other person say to her meaningfully: " Have you forgotten that I am a monster? "

Pei Lu: "..."

## Chapter 31

Pei Lu felt that Si Ting suddenly became a little scary . She silently took a step back and walked towards the door first.

She opened the door with shaking paws and glanced at the other person secretly when she entered . The weird look on the other person 's face at that moment seemed like her illusion . Now seeing her secretly looking at him, he looked back at her calmly.

Pei Lu held her forehead with her hand , she must have drunk too much.

The two of them stopped talking , or rather, Pei Lu unilaterally decided not to talk anymore. She felt that her mind was in a mess and she needed to think alone.

She was taking a bath and fell asleep . When she woke up , it was already three o'clock in the morning.

Pei Lu yawned and stood up from the water. As soon as she touched the bed, she suddenly felt a little thirsty, so she struggled to get up and floated outside . There was no water in her room. She floated out of her room and subconsciously looked towards the room diagonally opposite. She was stunned when she saw it.

There seems to be light in the gap.

It's already three o'clock , isn't Si Ting going to sleep?

Pei Lu leaned over curiously, but the door was closed and she couldn't hear any movement. She didn't know if it was a coincidence , but the moment she lay down , the door was suddenly opened from the inside . Pei Lu staggered and fell inside, right on top of someone.

She took a step back awkwardly, and said with a dry laugh: " I just saw the light in the door ... Why aren't you sleeping so late? "

" Go to bed right away. " The man looked at her.

Pei Lu came out to find water, so she only wore a bath towel. Her hair was still wet. Water drops fell on her shoulders, flowed down her smooth shoulders into the bath towel, leaving water marks on her skin, which reflected a little light in the dim light.

Si Ting took a step back to catch the trace, and the hand holding the door handle unconsciously used a little strength.

Pei Lu thought he was going to sleep, so she waved her hand and said, " Go to bed early. Don't stay up late, or you'll go bald. "

Although she didn't know whether fish could be bald.

After saying this, she turned and ran away, trotting downstairs to get some water to drink.

When she came up again, the door opposite was closed. Pei Lu didn't think much about it and went back to her room yawning.

The next day, Li Yequi came to the door with breakfast.

He looked like he had kidney deficiency after staying up all night, and he was gnawing on a fried dough stick half-heartedly. With dark circles under his eyes, he stared at Pei Lu, who had just come downstairs after a good sleep.

Li Yeqiu swallowed the dough stick in his mouth and said sarcastically: " What about college students? Aren't college students the pillars of the motherland? Aren't you afraid of being punished by God if you sleep until noon? "

Pei Lu ignored his fart, walked over, pinched a bun and stuffed it into her mouth. Then she had time to look at the time. It was already eleven o'clock.

She pointed at the table: " Why are you still eating fried dough sticks at 11 o'clock? "

Li Yeqiu was not justified but still confident: " This is my breakfast. Isn't the first meal breakfast? "

Pei Lu leaned in closer to observe his dark circles, sighed , and then said: " Boss Li is really hard-working. "

The Li family is still in a mess now. Li Zhiqu is not a big problem. In Li Yeqiu's words, Li Zhiqu is the type of toady. He does n't bite people, but he is a bit disgusting.

The ones who are biting the bullet are Li's other major shareholders. Now that Mr. Li, the pillar of support, is gone, some people are bound to become restless and try to take advantage of the situation.

Not long after, Si Ting also came down from upstairs. Pei Lu waved at him with her white arms and pushed a bowl of porridge to him.

Li Yeqiu came here to get some quiet time again. After the meeting yesterday, several old shareholders who had never liked him kept coming to his door, so he ran away.

Pei Lu chatted with the two of them for a few words, finished a bun in a few bites, and then went to the studio.

Pei Lu left, but Li Yeqiu was still hesitating while eating. It was not until Si Ting also looked like he was about to leave that he finally couldn't hold it in any longer.

Li Yeqiu said in a very cowardly manner: " Brother Ting, please help me, I can't do it myself. "

Even though the reason is not right, the anger is still strong.

Si Ting glanced at him and said, " The old man said that unless you die. "

He would only give him his trump card if Li Yeqiu was about to die.

Li Yeqiu: "..."

Li Yeqiu looked like he was about to die.

He really needs help, but he doesn't trust those people outside. He doesn't know if it's the post-traumatic stress disorder caused by Li Zhiqu. In short, he doesn't think anyone is a good person now, and he looks at everyone with caution.

Si Ting finished eating, slowly wiped his mouth with a handkerchief, glanced at his half-dead appearance and added: " But I can help you. "

Li Yeqiu poked his head in surprise: " Didn't you say you were going to help Nicholas find someone? Did you find him? "

He had no doubt that Si Ting had the money to help him. He had some inside information that this person seemed to have joined old lady Dunmore's private shipping and trading company. He didn't know how he joined, but old lady Dunmore loved sailing and archaeology. Those were

her private properties that she had run for a long time, and even her most beloved grandson had no share of them.

" Found it. The man fled to the next city. "

He used the scammed money to start a small investment company, which eventually went bankrupt.

In order not to alert the enemy, Nicholas borrowed his clean identity. The other party originally just wanted to borrow his identity. He was interested in these operations and wanted to go and take a look. That was why he said that to Pei Lu.

Now, he is not interested again.

Pei Lu stopped on the side of the road after Ye Ke howled at her and bought her favorite coffee. This coffee shop is located in the commercial district and usually does good business. When Pei Lu came out with her coffee, she saw a man at the door of the building opposite.

The man was talking on the phone with an anxious expression on his face, and was politely " invited " out by another man in a suit.

Pei Lu paused for a moment, thinking that she had bad luck today. Because she couldn't find a parking space in front of the coffee shop, she parked the car opposite.

Pei Ruhai indeed saw Pei Lu. A hint of surprise flashed in his eyes. No one knew what he was thinking of, but he actually called out to her.

" Pei Lu. "

It's still that familiar voice, still that familiar tone.

But Pei Lu didn't even turn her head, she just turned the key and opened the car.

" you ....."

Pei Ruhai frowned, as if he wanted to say something, but finally gave up.

This former daughter seemed to have grown up, but Pei Ruhai felt that she had become more independent now that she had grown up. Pei Lu had never listened to him before, and she would not listen to him in the future.

Otherwise, why did Zhou Jieyu only get one card back that day?

Pei Ruhai frowned and watched the white car leave. He didn't know that he was looking at someone else, and someone was also looking at him.

Chen Lang, who was drinking coffee on the second floor, happened to see this scene.

Because he had a lot of interviews coming up, Chen Lang asked his cousin who worked here to come out for coffee and ask for some advice on job interviews.

Since Chen Lang had done research on Pei's, he had naturally seen Pei Ruhai's photo. He recognized him as the boss of Pei's at a glance.

But immediately, he saw someone he knew.

Chen Lang thought he had seen it wrong, but how could he make a mistake when he had just had dinner with him yesterday?

" What are you looking at? "

The cousin was talking when he noticed that Chen Lang was distracted. He turned his head curiously and looked in the direction of his distraction. Then he smiled and said, " I did hear that Pei's company has recently cooperated with this company. "

Chen Lang suddenly pointed at the white car that drove away: " Brother, do you recognize that car? "

My cousin was stunned for a moment, then smiled and shook his head: " I can't see clearly, it's too far away, but judging from the appearance, it shouldn't be cheap. "

Most boys like cars, but he has never seen that kind of car.

After that, Chen Lang became a little absent-minded. In his mind, the two names of Pei were slowly connected together.

When Pei Lu rushed over, Ye Ke was about to take Dandan out. They were going to shoot again and had an appointment with Jiangjiang and Tong Sanjin.

Pei Lu distributed coffee to them, then stayed to clean the studio, waiting to go over to help after it was done.

She had just thrown away the broom when Dayi sent a message asking her where she was.

So Pei Lu told the other party the location of the studio and shared the two short plays with him.

When Si Ting came over, she stuffed a rag into his hand without any hesitation. The two of them worked in the studio for two hours. Pei Lu received another call from Ye Ke, asking her to come over to deliver something.

When Pei Lu pulled the man into the car, she asked curiously, " Don't you have to work today? "

Si Ting, sitting in the passenger seat, said calmly: " There is a manager who will take over, it's okay. "

Pei Lu: "..."

To be honest, she felt that investment was a good fit for him. With his luck, he would definitely make money on anything he invested in.

Dandan had never seen Si Ting before. She was shocked when she suddenly saw such a handsome and noble-looking guy . When the two of them were walking towards them from a distance, she pulled Ye Ke and asked her secretly if he was their new actor.

Ye Ke looked back, smiled and shook his head.

Pei Lu brought the clothes that the two had forgotten in the studio. Ye Ke greeted Si Ting generously, and then saw him standing aside waiting patiently.

Ye Ke quietly asked Pei Lu: " Did you succeed in seducing him? "

Pei Lu was a little confused.

Seeing her like this, Ye Ke looked down on her: " You haven't finished it yet? "

Pei Lu suddenly asked her seriously: " Why do you always think I want to pick him up? "

Ye Ke rolled his eyes and said, " Can you swear to heaven that you are not interested in him? "

Pei Lu blinked and said nothing.

Ye Ke poked her head and said, " How dare you bother him so much, asking him to clean the studio for you and spend time accompanying you everywhere, and you still say you don't like him? "

" Does that mean you like him? " Pei Lu was dissatisfied.

Ye Ke was shocked: " Pei Lu, don't you have a clear understanding of yourself? You are such a person who is afraid of bothering others. "

He is polite to everyone and always tries his best not to be found guilty of his mistakes. He does not have many friends of the opposite sex because he is afraid of getting involved in troublesome relationships.

Pei Lu covered her forehead and subconsciously turned to look at the man standing beside her. In front of Si Ting, there was a shy pretty girl standing. It was unknown what the two were talking about, but the girl glanced at her and their eyes met.

Then the girl ran away with a red face.

Pei Lu: " ? "

The girl ran away, but Si Ting was still standing there, looking at her with a smile in his eyes.

Pei Lu ran over, looked at the girl's back as she left, and asked, " What were you talking about just now? "

## Chapter 32

The man shook his head , looking like he wasn't going to say anything. Pei Lu puffed out her cheeks, looking a little unhappy.

After being asked many times, Si Ting finally spoke: " She wants my phone number. "

Pei Lu was shocked , and she didn't even notice it herself . Her expression suddenly became tense. " You gave it to her? "

Si Ting raised his eyebrows slightly at her: " My phone is with you. "

Pei Lu looked down at her small bag.

When getting off the bus just now , the other party forgot his cell phone on the seat , so she picked it up and put it in her bag.

Pei Lu's face turned a little red and she felt a little embarrassed. No wonder the girl glanced in her direction and ran away.

But before she could figure out why she was so nervous , she slapped her head and looked at Si Ting.

Si Ting asked her: " What's wrong? "

Pei Lu's expression became a little strange again . That didn't make sense. Si Ting knew his cell phone number. If he really wanted to give it to the other party, he could just recite it.

He was pointing directly at himself, but it seemed like he was hinting at others that he had a girlfriend QAQ .

Pei Lu's hands trembled as she started the car, and she looked at the man who had fastened his seat belt.

What does this mean?

So in the following time, Pei Lu had to glance at the person next to her from time to time while driving. Si Ting saw that she was absent-minded , bent his fingers and tapped her head, telling her to drive carefully.

Pei Lu's eyes swept across his slender fingers, and she rolled her eyes , as if she had made up her mind , and asked him: " Would you like to eat hot pot? There is a new restaurant nearby.

Dandan just gave me a coupon. "

It's four o'clock in the afternoon. They didn't have a big lunch, so it's reasonable to have a hotpot now.

Si Ting naturally had no objection to eating hotpot, and seeing that she looked interested, he nodded.

So Pei Lu turned the car around, opened the map navigation, and drove to the newly opened hot pot restaurant.

This newly opened internet-famous hotpot restaurant was packed with people. It wasn't mealtime, so they went in without queuing. Pei Lu excitedly took the tablet for ordering, swiped it several times, and then submitted and placed the order.

When the waiter was waiting by the side and taking the bill with a smile, Pei Lu looked at Si Ting as if she realized something.

Si Ting didn't notice her strangeness at all, or maybe he was used to it like her. But this time, when the waiter asked for the bill, he took out his cell phone and didn't let Pei Lu pay.

Pei Lu was distracted, and when she came to her senses, the waiter had already left with a smile.

Fresh hot pot dishes, desserts and main dishes were brought up one by one, and their table was soon full. Pei Lu was attracted by the aroma of the hot pot, and started to put the meat into it excitedly with chopsticks.

When getting the seasoning, she seriously recommended her secret recipe to Si Ting, and excitedly picked up some shrimp paste for him, saying that this is called killing each other .

Si Ting narrowed his eyes, took a bite of his own kind and found it tasted good. Pei Lu laughed at the sight.

She held her chin up and looked at the man sitting opposite her eating. She always felt dazed. It seemed that she had not remembered for a long time that the other party was just the object of her mission.

In other words, the other party's ferocious appearance with a fish tail was like a dream, and the image of him sitting in front of her, or wearing a suit, was more deeply engraved in her mind.

Pei Lu silently counted all the details that were so natural that they were usually overlooked, and then she discovered with a bit of sadness that Ye Ke seemed to be right.

She doesn't even need to look for other references. Just say yesterday, so many people had a lively meal together. She still has a strong sense of boundaries. It's better with her roommates.

After thinking about it carefully –

Even at gatherings with men and women, she would not sit next to the seniors, would not talk to them actively, would not drink the drinks they pushed to her, and would not respond even when those people started to talk about her and Chen Lang.

She had known Chen Lang since her freshman year, and also knew those seniors. They were all cheerful people who liked to make friends, and they were not improper people. They even helped her and her roommates a lot, and she was willing to call those people friends.

But it's still different.

When facing other opposite sex, she would not make such decisions on her own. She would take the menu and pick it from beginning to end by herself. Even if she came out with her best friend Ye Ke, they had to share a menu.

After all, they are two completely different people with different preferences and tastes, so it is inevitable that there are things that one wants to eat but the other doesn't take into account. She would recommend her own "secret recipe" to Ye Ke, or graciously accept his invitation to dinner.

But what if it was the opposite sex? What if it was Chen Lang, the man she once wanted to develop into a boyfriend?

Pei Lu felt that something was really wrong. She felt uncomfortable whenever she thought about it. She didn't even want to accept the other party's invitation to dinner. She didn't want to owe anyone anything.

Then why could Si Ting do it? Did she never seriously discuss such things with the other party? It seems to be true.

It simply doesn't work to measure the quality of a relationship by the length of time you've known each other.

So, the person opposite seems ...

It's really different.

Pei Lu's heart skipped a beat and she felt a little panicked.

But this panic was quickly replaced by a glass of cold honey lemon water.

She was thinking while eating the meat. The spicy taste entered her mouth and made her cheeks a little red. She subconsciously picked up the cold sparkling lemonade and took a sip.

This sparkling water was a special blend of the store and was made a little slowly.

She was so absorbed in her thoughts that she didn't even notice that the waiter had come over, and it was Si Ting who pushed the water to her side.

The fingertips of the two people touched for a moment, and the water droplets covering the outside of the transparent glass just happened to slide down.

Pei Lu subconsciously wanted to retract her hand, only to feel that the cold water droplet was about to burn her hand.

She pursed her lips and took a sip of the tea. There was a faint taste of honey in it, mixed with the sourness of lemon and the coolness of mint, which slowly slid into her throat. She put down the cup, and when she looked at the man again, her eyes changed slightly.

Pei Lu had a hidden worry in her heart. She had countless doubts about the person in front of her.

But, but what can she do? Why did she fall in love with a monster for the first time?

Can you call it a monster?

"What's wrong?" Si Ting had been observing Pei Lu for a long time, and he felt that the other party was a little absent-minded.

He rarely saw Pei Lu distracted while eating, but he couldn't figure out why.

Si Ting rarely has anything to worry about, and rarely has such doubts. After all, the information in this world is very developed, and no matter what the problem is, the answer can be found in books or computers.

But sometimes he couldn't understand Pei Lu.

Normally, he is a man who plans and plans, and many things are under his control, such as casually pinching a lottery ticket.



Although this world emphasizes a scientific worldview, things like luck do exist, and he can see them.

If there was something that was out of control in his long life, the first was that he fell into the trench before his death and was hit by such a strange curse, and the second was Pei Lu.

He thought it would be a simple matter to stay away from her, but when he found that her life seemed perfect with or without him, he was shocked to realize how vulnerable his self-righteousness was.

This loss of control did not bring him much unpleasantness. On the contrary, a desire to control and possess the other person became increasingly strong, almost overflowing from his chest.

And now, this feeling of being out of control is back again.

It turned out that he didn't understand Pei Lu, and he couldn't figure out what the other person was thinking. For example, now, he didn't know why the other person was distracted.

Si Ting could only figure it out by himself. For example, the hotpot here was not very delicious, but it didn't seem like it either. After all, Pei Lu had just eaten half of it and excitedly took a photo of the dishes on the table.

Why is that?

Si Ting inevitably thought of what happened yesterday.

They spent most of their time together, so he knew each other's past emotions on everything.

If there is anything I don't understand or know, it is those classmates who suddenly got together yesterday.

Si Ting turned his gaze back to Pei Lu's face.

As luck would have it, Pei Lu also quietly approached the other party.

“...”

The four looked at each other, and no one showed any embarrassment, but the scene was weird for a moment.

The two of them finished the hotpot, each with their own thoughts, and then went home.

Li Yeqiu slept under the quilt in someone else's house for the whole day and left in a daze in the afternoon. When he learned that the two people had just returned after eating hot pot, he cursed them and said they were not kind.

Pei Lu had something on her mind, so she ran upstairs. Unexpectedly, as soon as she ran upstairs, she received a message from Chen Lang, who asked her to have hotpot the next day at the newly opened internet-famous hotpot restaurant.

Pei Lu, who just swallowed the meat from someone else's store: "..."

Pei Lu held the phone seriously, quickly replied a line of words, and then threw herself on the bed to sleep.

But once she accepted that she seemed to have fallen in love with the big fish she raised, she was so excited that she couldn't close her eyes. She felt that the other party was really good in every way and she could get the upper hand by being close to the water.

Pei Lu happily wrapped herself in the quilt, got so excited that she finally fell asleep.

When Si Ting was waiting for her to wake up downstairs the next day, Pei Lu was already dressed and ready to go out.

Her eyes sparkled: " Today is Monday, I have to go to school. "

But she is already a junior, and there are not many junior classes in their major.

The man nodded to show that he understood, and then said quite naturally: " Let's have lunch together at noon. "

Pei Lu smiled and waved her hand, saying, " Go find Li Yequ to eat. I have an appointment at noon. "

She will have a family in the future, so she has to make things clear with Chen Lang.

Si Ting: "..."

Another appointment?

## Chapter 33

Pei Lu rarely saw an uneasy expression on Si Ting's face . Although it was only for a moment, she still saw it. She ran out with a smile.

I'm sorry , I just couldn't help it.

Fang Yunzhu bought her breakfast . The two of them gathered together as usual during class.

Fang Yunzhu hid behind her and whispered to her: " What's going on between you and Chen Lang? "

Pei Lu was a little confused.

Fang Yunzhu said, " Yesterday he actually came to talk to me . He talked about you and asked me about your family. "

Fang Yunzhu didn't ask about Pei Lu's family situation in detail. She could sense from their daily interactions that Pei Lu didn't have a good relationship with her family . Since she didn't want to talk about it , she definitely didn't want to talk about it.

If she were like her , with such a good relationship with her troublesome father at home , she would definitely talk about it every day.

Pei Lu was also a little confused. Could the little flame of love between her and Chen Lang that had failed to ignite be rekindled? Wouldn't he feel awkward?

Anyway, Pei Lu herself felt very awkward and embarrassed.

" What did he ask you? " Pei Lu didn't understand.

Fang Yunzhu didn't understand either, but she scratched her head and said, " Just ... ask me where you live and what your parents do. "

Pei Lu was completely confused , but she couldn't come up with an answer by thinking about it, so she could only put her mind at ease and start the class.

She didn't agree to go to the hot pot restaurant with Chen Lang last night because the restaurant was not very close to their school and it would take a lot of time to go back and forth . Another reason was that she didn't want to spend other people's money.

Chen Lang was generous with his money and always liked to pay the bill . If she wanted to ask him to go Dutch while she was eating , he would definitely not agree. Pei Lu didn't like to have such meaningless arguments with him.

They made an appointment to meet at a cafeteria on campus. The food there was quite good. After Pei Lu finished her meal, she wanted to pack a portion for Si Ting to try. She thought the roujiamo here was very authentic and there was no other place like it.

Next time I have to bring him to the school to eat in person. There are a lot of delicious and inexpensive food in their school.

There was not much focus in the first class of the new semester. Everyone walked out of the classroom as the bell rang. Pei Lu and her roommates saw Chen Lang waiting outside.

The girl who lived in Pei Lu's lower bunk asked with a smile: " Senior, aren't you going to have an interview? Why do you still have time to come here? "

Chen Lang smiled and said politely, " I'll go in the afternoon and have a meal before leaving. "

The roommates looked at each other and saw the ridicule in each other's eyes.

" Let's go, " Pei Lu nodded at him, then turned and walked towards the stairs on the other side. Chen Lang followed behind, saying goodbye to the girls with a smile.

" Sisters, don't talk nonsense anymore, " Chen Lang and Pei Lu left. Fang Yunzhu, who was entrusted with an important task by Pei Lu, emphasized to her friends seriously, " In fact, Pei Lu went to tell Senior Chen today that she has a boyfriend. "

" You have a boyfriend. When did it happen? " someone exclaimed in surprise.

Fang Yunzhu touched his nose.

Oops, I said it wrong. Pei Lu's original words were that she might have a boyfriend soon.

Doesn't that mean there's someone you like?

Pei Lu doesn't like socializing and doesn't know many people in school, but as Chen Lang walked along, many people greeted him.

The canteen was newly built, a bit far from their teaching building , and there were relatively few people there, so they didn't have to wait in line for long before they were able to buy food.

Pei Lu placed her tray on the table in the corner, and Chen Lang thoughtfully bought her some drinks.

Since she had already bought it and couldn't return it, she didn't act pretentiously and just said thank you and took it.

Chen Lang sat down opposite her, still looking gentle, but Pei Lu felt that his gentleness was different from Si Ting's.

" Everyone was together that day, it was so noisy, I didn't get to talk to you for a while. How was your winter vacation? Where did you go for the New Year? "

Chen Lang started talking with a smile.

Pei Lu didn't know why the other party suddenly asked her such a question, but she had a keen intuition that the other party would not do this for no reason.

So she smiled and said, " That's it, nothing to say. "

Chen Lang joked: " You are being modest, aren't you? Have you always been at home? "

Pei Lu blinked, " Not really. "

Chen Lang stopped asking questions and started talking about the interesting things that happened during his winter vacation. However, Pei Lu knew about these things because Chen Lang posted on WeChat Moments quite frequently. He almost used his WeChat Moments as a diary. She saw it, but she just didn't like it.

So Pei Lu started to eat during this time.

I haven't eaten anything in the cafeteria during the whole winter vacation. This food is so delicious.

Chen Lang observed Pei Lu as he spoke, and he found that his topic did not seem to attract the other party's attention.

He paused for a moment, and then seemed a little distressed: " Why do I feel that you don't like to talk to me much during the winter vacation? "

Pei Lu swallowed the crispy roujiamo in her mouth, then slowly wiped her fingers clean.

" Senior Chen, to be honest, I don't know what you mean by asking me out today. "

Chen Lang was stunned, as if he did not expect Pei Lu to say such a thing. He was about to open his mouth to speak, but was interrupted by Pei Lu again.

" Senior, please listen to me first. "

" I don't really like this kind of temptation. \'

Chen Lang was stunned.

" I know that you had a crush on me, and I also had a crush on you, really. "

Pei Lu looked at the other person without hiding anything, and finally said such words directly.

But before Chen Lang could be happy, he heard her say, " But senior, I don't like being tempted, and I don't like to tempt others. "

It was okay when she was uncertain at the beginning, she could understand it. She had received confessions from others before. In fact, that kind of uncertain temptation was also a beautiful and innocent memory.

But she doesn't like to be tested again and again. She herself is a relatively introverted person when it comes to relationships between men and women, and is actually not very proactive.

But at that time, if Chen Lang had told her clearly once and asked about what was going on between them, she would have told him directly that, in fact, we can give it a try and she is willing to do so.

But Chen Lang didn't, never did. Even though others joked that they were a couple, he himself never admitted it. He just walked beside her in an ambiguous way.

He would even step back before her at certain moments when he felt a little cold, as if to prove that he didn't need her.

She didn't know what was wrong with Chen Lang, why he suddenly wanted to invite her to dinner, but –

" I think we can end our affairs here, so that no one will be troubled. You have to work in the future, and I have to study in the future. We are all adults and have our own things to do. This is the best way. "

She didn't mean to criticize the other person. He might just be like that. He was an excellent senior and many girls liked him, so he was also a proud person and wanted to wait for others to pursue him.

This is what Pei Lu thought when she was making unfounded guesses, but no matter what, their personalities were not suitable.

Even if it is pointed out, it is obviously inappropriate.

Chen Lang was stunned by her words. Only after he realized the meaning of her words did he become really anxious.

" Listen to me first, it's not ..."

But Pei Lu interrupted him and said, " That's all I want to say. Thank you for buying the drinks. Do you have anything else to say? "

After all, I drank someone else's drink, and since this is the last time, I have to say everything that needs to be said.

Chen Lang wanted to explain anxiously, but when he met those eyes that seemed to see through everything, he opened his mouth, but suddenly couldn't say anything.

It seemed to be true and there was nothing to refute. Perhaps it was because Pei Lu was beautiful and outstanding, and he would still feel a little inferior when such a person stood in front of him. Therefore, even though he knew that the other party also had a good impression of him, he did not want to be the first to point it out, as if he wanted to prove that the other party also liked him.

It seemed that only when the other party surrendered first would he put down his weapon and rush towards the other party.

But he calculated wrongly. If he kept wasting time like this, his feelings would be exhausted. noisy voices around her , Pei Lu left the cafeteria.

Li Yeqiu finally succeeded in finding a helper. When Nicholas stood in front of him in a frivolous manner, his mouth was almost grinning behind his ears.

When he wanted to toast to the other party and say that they were happy to work together, Nicholas hugged his shoulders with a serious face and asked him sternly: " Don't you think the company today is a bit strange? "

Li Yeqiu was stunned for a moment and looked at Si Ting.

If Nicholas hadn't told him, he really wouldn't have discovered anything.

Doesn't Si Ting usually have that expressionless look on his face?

" You have such a bad eye, " Nicholas attacked him mercilessly, " No wonder you were bullied by a fool like Li Zhiqiu. "

Li Yeqiu: "..."

Why are you making personal attacks? :).

Li Yeqiu wanted to roll his eyes at him.

Nicholas said again: " Why don't you go and ask? "

The jewelry that had been sold for a long time made him more money than he could spend, so he was definitely not worried about money.

Li Yeqiu looked back at the man sitting alone, rolled his eyes, and then suddenly said: " No need to ask, I think I know. "

Li Yeqiu was just a talkative person. He felt that Si Ting would definitely not be able to hear him from such a distance .

" Oh? Then tell me about it. "

Li Yeqiu said seriously: " Maybe he is trapped by love. "

As soon as he finished speaking, Si Ting looked in the direction of the two people as if he had sensed something.

Li Yeqiu shuddered, feeling as if he was whispering in the ear of his desk mate during class and was caught by the head teacher.

But it was the first time that Nicholas knew about this, after all, he had only met Pei Lu once.

But if he talked about this, he would not be sleepy anymore. He had not yet realized that he had just been given a light look, and he foolishly ran over and sat down next to Si Ting, hugging his shoulders like a good brother:

" Si, you are still not as good as me in chasing girls. You teach me how to make money, and I teach you how to chase people. Do you think this deal is worthwhile? "

Li Yejiu: "..."

Si Ting looked at the hand on his shoulder and finally put the cup in his hand on the table. He pushed the other's claw away, tapped his fingers rhythmically on the table, and really made a " hmm " sound.

Li Yejiu: "..."

## Chapter 34

Pei Lu thought that it was probably because her mother had never been in a relationship , so once she figured out her feelings, she became very excited. She was so excited that she couldn't concentrate on the class, she kept checking her phone , and she was also so excited ... I don't dare to meet him QAQ .

Pei Lu frowned , not knowing why.

It was obvious that before this, she could get along with the other person very normally.

But when she said those words to Chen Lang in the cafeteria , it seemed like she was telling him something while analyzing herself at the same time.

At that moment, she suddenly felt that all those were excuses. No matter what it was, it was just that she herself didn't like to take the initiative, or that two people who didn't like to take the initiative were just not suitable for each other.

Actually, I just don't like it enough.

If you really like him , you would want to hug his neck right now, happily tell him how you feel , and ask him if he is willing to give it a try with you.

Pei Lu didn't know about other girls who didn't like to take the initiative , but she had never been so eager to express her feelings to others like this.

But that kind of uneasiness and impatience turned into two little people , constantly fighting in her mind, from the afternoon to the evening. When the impatience slowly faded away and her rationality returned, she became a little cowardly again.

But no matter how cowardly you are, you have to go back.

She was about to leave the dormitory , her coat already on, when Wu Jingjing, who was sleeping in the lower bunk, suddenly asked awkwardly: " Sisters, are you free tonight? "

Pei Lu lived on the upper bunk. She had already climbed down from the bunk and was about to put on her coat and leave . When she heard Wu Jingjing say that, she stopped.

As soon as Wu Jingjing said this, all the sisters in the dormitory who were playing with their phones looked at her.

Wu Jingjing blushed , but she scratched her head shyly and said with a smile: " I'm no longer single ... I'm with Li Guang from the Physical Education Department , so the two of us would like to treat everyone to a meal. I wonder if anyone is free. "

She explained: " Originally, I wanted to talk about this in two days, but they seem to be going out for a competition, and I don't know when they can make time next time ... If everyone has an appointment tonight, we can make an appointment next time. "

The girl next to him turned over and said with a smile: " I knew you two were having an affair a long time ago ... Come on, why bother doing it next time? We are all just sitting around in the dormitory. "

Fang Yunzhu also said happily: " Yes, there is less to do at the beginning of the school year. Li Guang is the tall guy who always asked you to go for a walk in the playground last semester. When did you two get together? "

Wu Jingjing said embarrassedly: " It just happened in the past two days ..."

Fang Yunzhu simply got out of bed and rushed to her dressing table: " Come on, come on, come on, how can I not have time for something like this? I love to join in the fun the most. "

Everyone responded positively, and Pei Lu, who wanted to leave, couldn't move.

Seeing that she was still standing there, Wu Jingjing asked, " Lulu, are you free? "

Pei Lu hesitated for a moment, but still smiled and said, " Yes. "

It only took her a few seconds to think it through. She decided to go and take a look, to learn from others and see how young couples get along with each other.

The restaurant chosen by Wu Jingjing and Li Guang was not in the university town. The two groups took a taxi to the commercial street. The place chosen by the young couple was a buffet with a good reputation on the commercial street. The price was not expensive and the taste was okay. A group of people went in lively, found a big table, sat together and began to interrogate the young couple.

For example, who confessed first, whether they had gone on a date, etc. Everyone was a sensible person and asked light-hearted and joking questions to the point, not involving other people's privacy that they didn't want to talk about. Wu Jingjing blushed a little when asked by her friends, but Li Guang answered them openly.

Li Guang is not the cheerful type, he is a very gentle person. He will silently pay attention to everyone's needs, help everyone get the ingredients and tools they need, and silently help everyone organize the empty plates, placing them on the edge waiting for the waiter to clean them up.

He speaks slowly and patiently, and always has a smile on his face. You won't be amused by him, but it's very easy to get along with him.

Pei Lu took notes in a small notebook in her heart while silently observing the young couple, or rather, observing Li Guang.

——It wasn't because of anything else, she just felt a little strange.

Li Guang is a very gentle person. Everyone says so, and she herself thinks so too.

But what about Si Ting? If she had to find an adjective to describe Si Ting, Pei Lu would also like to use gentle to describe him, but it was still not right.

The gentle smile on his face was different from Li Guang's. At least Pei Lu didn't think that Si Ting's gentleness would make people feel relaxed. If they met Si Ting, even if he had a peaceful smile as usual, people would not joke around like they did with Li Guang.

Pei Lu spoke less and less. Somehow, she remembered the way the other person looked when he first came to her.

He is mysterious but dangerous, and has nothing to do with gentleness.

As Pei Lu thought about it, she felt a little cold in her heart. She felt as if someone had poured a bucket of cold water on her head. She suddenly realized from her joy that she seemed to be living in a half-true and half-false illusion, and had never touched the other person's truest side. But at the same time, in a secret corner of her heart, she couldn't suppress her excitement. The suppressed secret was eager to jump out, tear off the man's mask and disguise, and see his true appearance.

Pei Lu ate her meal bit by bit, then sent a message to her current secret crush, wanting him to pick her up.

Si Ting responded quickly and asked for her address.

Pei Lu gave him a location, and then casually took a picture of the egg tart in front of herself.

She had bitten half of the egg tart, and she didn't carefully adjust the lighting and angle, she just took a casual shot.

After she finished taking the photo and put her phone down, she suddenly realized that the surroundings had become much quieter and everyone was looking at her.

" Okay, is this the person Xiao Fang told us about at noon? "

The roommate next to her poked her with her elbow with a smirk.

When Chen Lang was waiting for her at the classroom door at noon, she specifically asked Fang Yunzhu to explain to her roommates.

Pei Lu did not deny it. She pointed at her face and asked seriously: " Is it that obvious? "

" Why isn't it obvious? " Wu Jingjing looked at her with a smile, " I really should find you a mirror, exactly like I did then ..."

As she said this, she glanced at her boyfriend next to her awkwardly, and every time they blinked, it was like a basket of dog food.

Seeing that she was not opposed to this topic, Li Guang asked with a smile: " How far has it progressed? "

Pei Lu didn't shy away and said distressedly: " I haven't started chasing her yet. "

" Then you have to work harder. If you don't, the handsome guys will be snatched away! "

" ... "

" ... "

While Pei Lu was being teased by everyone, Si Ting left the entanglement of his two friends.

Nicholas talked for the whole afternoon, but in fact he couldn't say anything useful. He just said he would give her something she liked.

But he was not wrong in these words.

Si Ting sat in the car thinking about what Pei Lu liked, and finally asked the driver to park the car in front of the flower shop.



Because Pei Lu had said before that he had gone to the city to have dinner with his roommate, he changed into a new set of clothes.

He wore a suit when he was with those two people during the day, but it would be inappropriate to wear a suit at this time.

He and Pei Lu were indeed not from the same world, but he thought that at least it would be appropriate for him to stand next to her.

It was already late at night when Pei Lu and her friends came out of the store. Time passed quickly as they ate and chatted.

When Li Guang wanted to stop a car to take everyone back to school, Pei Lu took the initiative to leave the team. She smiled and said to everyone: " Someone will pick me up. I will go home and sleep today. "

Everyone knew that Pei Lu lived outside, so no one asked any questions.

" Who will pick you up? We'll stay here with you for a while. We'll leave when your car arrives. "

Wu Jingjing stood next to Pei Lu, thinking that it was not a good idea for her to wait for the bus here alone so late at night. There was no safety issue on this busy street, but it would be boring to wait alone.

Pei Lu was just about to wave her hand to let them go first when a familiar car arrived.

The car behind kept a considerable distance from the two expensive-looking black cars. It seemed that it saw the logos on the back of the cars and felt that it would be fatal if it were to be rubbed against them.

The car only drove to the intersection and then stopped, revealing its outline in the distance .

Pei Lu recognized the car and turned to Wu Jingjing and said, " Call a car. My pick-up person is here. "

Wu Jingjing looked over curiously, and saw a tall man bending down and walking out from the back door of the car. The man's outline against the strong light cast a perfect silhouette in the bright night, and he walked out of the darkness little by little and appeared in front of them.

The other person was dressed in casual clothes that were elegant yet not dull. He looked to be about the same age as them, but there was something more about him that was hard to describe.

Pei Lu didn't even notice that she was smiling broadly. She ran towards the group and was about to turn around and say goodbye to her friends when she realized that everyone was still standing there and no one got on the bus.

So she tugged at the man's sleeve and pointed to her back: " These are all my roommates. That one is Li Guang, also a classmate. "

Si Ting greeted everyone politely, but everyone seemed a little reserved. They didn't seem like the kind of people of the same age who would quickly become friends upon meeting each other. Even Fang Yunzhu, who was usually talkative, seemed to be withdrawn and just nodded with a smile.

Pei Lu sighed softly in her heart, feeling that what she thought was absolutely correct.

Although she walked to the car and was about to get in, she was surprised to find something on the seat.

Her eyes sparkled as she pointed at the object: " For me? "

Si Ting hummed , took out the gentle light-colored cappuccino and stuffed it into her arms.

Fang Yunzhu still felt that the handsome guy was very attractive. She even suspected that he was a celebrity, but he had just debuted so she couldn't remember his name.

So before getting in the car, she looked in the direction of the parking lot again with hope.

I saw that her friend, who usually kept a distance from the opposite sex, was lowering her head and seemed a little shy, but her eyes were bright under the light.

There was a big bouquet of flowers in her arms, and she smiled gently in the night.

The man looked down at her, seemingly smiling as he put his head over hers and pushed her into the car.

" Xiao Zhu, stop looking, let's go! "

...

## Chapter 35

As soon as Pei Lu opened the car door , a light and elegant fragrance wafted into her nose.

There was a bouquet of flowers on the back seat. It was not an exaggerated bouquet , nor were they bright red roses , but pink roses.

The delicate light pink flowers are embellished with cute little white flowers. The flower paper is the color of an ice cream cone and is rolled up like a large ice cream cone . It is so cute.

Si Ting reached out and picked up the bouquet and put it in her arms. Pei Lu's face was a little hot , but she still hugged the bouquet , then looked up happily and asked him: " Is it for me? "

" Well , do you like it? "

" like! "

Pei Lu happily took a closer look , then let Si Ting take her to the car.

As they walked the whole way, she kept holding her flowers. She didn't ask the other party why he bought her flowers for no reason. Her heart was beating wildly and she secretly glanced at the other person from time to time.

The person next to her seemed to have eyes on the back of his head . He was clearly turning his head to look out the window on the other side, but when she looked over, he suddenly turned back and their eyes met.

Pei Lu seemed to be scalded and withdrew her gaze.

She had prepared a lot of things to say during the day and wanted to come back to tell him, but after dinner that night , she changed her mind.

When you have no idea what kind of person your secret crush is , you might even cast your net in the wrong direction.

Pei Lu trimmed the bouquet of flowers and put it in the empty vase in the room . Then she held a small video conference with Ye Ke and Dandan.

When I hung up the phone, it was already twelve o'clock in the evening.

Pei Lu thought about it and suddenly wanted to see if the other person was asleep.

She quietly opened the door of her room and looked diagonally across from her.

The door of the room opposite was closed, but she heard some subtle noises.

The sound insulation of the room is actually very good. Pei Lu has tried it herself. When she was listening to rock and roll and dancing in her room, people outside could read and study quietly.

However, even with such sound insulation, she actually heard a slight noise.

Her heart moved, and she forgot the painful experience of being caught as soon as she poked her head out last time, and she quietly moved to the other side.

She put her ear to the door, trying to find the subtle sound just now.

The movement just now was so fast and sudden that it passed through her mind in an instant, so she couldn't catch it at all and had no idea what it was.

Pei Lu listened quietly for a while, her neck became a little stiff, and suddenly she heard a muffled sound.

It didn't sound like a person falling to the ground or something hitting the ground. She was wondering whether she should knock on the door to ask what was going on, when she suddenly felt something strange under her feet.

She lowered her head and saw some dark liquid slowly flowing out of the crack in the door.

There was no light in the corridor and her door was closed, so with the warm light leaking from her room, she saw the flowing liquid, which looked a bit like red and a bit like blue. The liquid flowed from under her furry slippers and looked a bit sticky.

Pei Lu was stunned and stood there, not knowing how to react.

She took a step back with a blank mind, and the sticky liquid stuck to her slippers, leaving a footprint on the light-colored carpet.

Is this going to be caught? QAQ .

When Pei Lu's mind was confused, there was a sudden movement from the door lock. Pei Lu suddenly met a pair of eyes with a faint light in the darkness, and his heart was shaken.

" you ....."

She spoke tremblingly.

" What's wrong? "

The other person was only wearing a black bathrobe. He might have come out in a hurry, so he didn't wipe the water off his hair. Water droplets dripped onto the side of his neck with faint blue veins, slid down the slightly protruding blood vessels, disappeared into the black bathrobe, outlining the contours of his chest, and flowed on the mottled scales.

Pei Lu wanted to ask, how could it leak out from here ...

Flow out that kind of stuff.

But when she glanced at the ground, she was suddenly stunned.

There was clearly nothing on the ground.

Pei Lu's eyes were filled with doubt and she looked up at the other person. However, this time, the other person lowered his head slightly, and his hair blocked his eyes, so she couldn't see his expression clearly. However, Pei Lu felt that the air around her had become colder, and she instinctively felt that there was some danger.

Pei Lu took a deep breath and raised her head. " I just couldn't sleep, so I wanted to come and see if you were asleep ..."

" Well, no. "

In the past, Si Ting should have turned aside and let her into the room, but this time, she just stood at the door without moving, as if silently refusing something.

But Pei Lu felt more and more weird. She took another step forward, and this time, she got closer to the other person. She could almost smell the unique scent of the other person, which was a mixture of mint shower gel and a light sea breeze.

" No sleep, what are you doing? "

Si Ting's eyes dimmed a little in the shadows. Behind the door that Pei Lu couldn't see, the hand holding the door handle was bulging with blue veins.

The thing inside his body realized that he had lost control, so it was ferociously and impatiently trying to take back control of this body.

Just a moment ago, he lost control of his emotions and leaked out mental power that shouldn't exist in this world. At that time, Pei Lu should have been standing outside the door. He didn't know whether she had been affected badly, nor did he know what she saw that made her dazed look just now.

Si Ting tried to find some fear in the other person's expression, but he didn't expect that the other person was not afraid at all, but took a step forward.

At that moment, he was the one who felt fear in his heart.

He resisted the urge to step back and stared at her face.

Pei Lu stood on tiptoe, reached out and lifted his wet hair, and gave him a serious suggestion: " Blow it, this is not good. "

After saying that, she didn't give the other party a chance to refuse, and turned around and ran to her room: " Wait for me, I'll get the hair dryer to help you blow dry! "

The moment the other party turned and left, Si Ting took a small step back silently and breathed a sigh of relief in his heart.

He turned around and looked at the messy bathroom with the door half open. The lock of the bathroom door was broken, revealing a bathtub half filled with dark blood. If you look closely, you can see broken hard scales floating on it.

The moment the sound of footsteps became clear again, Si Ting took a big step and slammed the bathroom door, then pulled his bathrobe tighter around him.

Pei Lu grabbed her hair dryer and rushed into the other person's room, then took the initiative and pulled a chair for him to sit down.

Si Ting was amused by her and walked over to sit on the chair. Pei Lu quietly looked forward along the half of the other person's exposed neck, then curled her lips in dissatisfaction.

Why do you cover it so tightly? Are boys nowadays so careful in protecting themselves?

She was a little hesitant in her heart, but she still connected the power cord, turned on the hair dryer, and started to blow his hair.

Si Ting's hair was a little hard, and it made her palms itchy. She ruffled his short hair as if to play a prank. He still sat there with a good temper. Looking down at him, her heart beat unbalanced by his clear facial lines and beautiful eyebrows.

Just very good!!

No matter how you look at it, it's very cute!!

Pei Lu roared in her heart.

So where exactly is that sense of dissonance, and how can she capture that strange feeling? Pei Lu was so attracted by the beauty that she almost went insane while blow-drying her hair.

The hair dryer was quite reliable and dried Si Ting's hair in no time. She slowly put away the machine with a troubled look on her face, and rubbed his hair in dissatisfaction.

The other person seemed to find her like this quite interesting. He sat there, raised his head and looked at her with a slightly raised eyebrow.

Pei Lu didn't look at him, but bent down to unplug the plug underneath.

She didn't see that the moment she lowered her head and bent down, the dark light in Si Ting's eyes became deeper and deeper.

Pei Lu unplugged the plug and was about to get up, but her head tilted and hit the corner of the desk.

With a " bang " , the hair dryer fell to the ground and tears immediately welled up in her eyes. In desperation, she grabbed something. The thing was soft and didn't seem too strong, so she pulled it off.

Just when she was about to sit down on the ground, a pair of strong arms grabbed her.

The mixed aroma at Pei Lu's nose became stronger and stronger, and she even felt a little dizzy. Because her legs were twisted and bent, in order to avoid sitting on the ground, she could only cling to her savior's arm.

After a slight dizziness, she slowly raised her head and finally saw the postures of the two of them clearly.

The other person was still sitting on the chair, but in order to catch her, he lowered his upper body very low. Because his arms were exerting force, the muscles of his arms bulged clearly. The small area of her scalp that was hit was still numb, and the tears in her eyes had not yet faded. She grabbed the other person's arm and maintained a half-kneeling position, with a very stiff expression on her face.

Because what she just pulled was none other than the black bathrobe.

At this moment, the large bathrobe was hanging on the other person's arms, revealing a large area of the chest that should have been covered.

There are a few mottled scales on the pale and beautiful texture of the right heart. Half of the black scales are hidden under the almost transparent skin, and there are bloodstains as thin as hair at the joints.

Black scales, red bloodshot, and nearly transparent white skin outline a shape that looks very much like a heart, but it looks incomplete and weird.

Seeing the frozen tears in the girl's eyes, the gentleness on Si Ting's face faded away bit by bit along with the depth in his eyes. He exerted a little force with his arms and lifted Pei Lu up.

Pei Lu took a breath of cold air in a trance, and in the blink of an eye, she was embraced by the other party.

Her hands pressed against the other person's increasingly cold skin in panic. Something in her brain was buzzing, rapidly draining the air from her head.

Their skins were pressed against each other, so close that he could hear the strong yet rapid heartbeat, and the light but dry breathing.

There seemed to be a helpless sigh in the quiet room.

While Pei Lu was still at a loss, a helpless voice as soft as a feather fell into her ears.

" Are you scared? "

## Chapter 36

The voice was still as calm as a man's usual voice , but when it rang in Pei Lu's ears and penetrated into her brain that could no longer think, it suddenly gave her goose bumps. Here it comes , that feeling comes again , the voice in her mind completely peels off its disguise, and she suddenly feels something extremely real.

At this moment, she seemed to be standing on a calm seashore . The windless and waveless sea seemed harmless , and the little fluorescent spots in it seemed to make you feel relaxed and cute. However, those little fluorescent spots were not actually beautiful glowing mayflies, but an insignificant little scale of a brutal beast.

He lurks under the calm sea , silently stirring up huge waves.

Pei Lu's body suddenly trembled.

She bit her lip and raised her head , looking at the man holding her . Her hand moved up along the other's mottled scales and skin , and finally, her hand fell on his shoulder.

Si Ting stared at her face, not missing a single change in her expression. Under the light, the girl had skin as white as snow, white teeth and bright eyes . There was panic in the depths of her pupils, but in the panic, he ...

I actually saw some stubbornness in him.

The tense string in Si Ting's mind was suddenly plucked.

Pei Lu took a deep breath, looked up at the man's light-colored thin lips , and uttered two words:

" Don't be afraid. "

What are you afraid of? There's nothing to be afraid of. I've seen you almost die.

The thin string in Si Ting's brain finally broke after the tremor . His right atrium had never reacted so violently before . It seemed like pain , but also like joy.

Si Ting buried his head in her shoulder and suddenly laughed.

Pei Lu was confused by his sudden action. Her hands were still pushing on his shoulders, but she didn't use much strength. Instead, his head, which was placed on the side of her neck, was vibrating because of his muffled laughter, which made her neck itchy.

But she still didn't understand why Si Ting laughed like that.

He had never laughed like that before.

But Pei Lu was really happy, because she didn't seem to have to think about what kind of net to weave, what kind of bait to choose, or when to cast the bait, and the big fish just took the bait by itself.

" What are you laughing at? "

She squinted her eyes and somehow joined in the laughter. She reached out to push him away to see his expression, to see how captivating that handsome and beautiful face looked when he smiled. But his laughter slowly stopped and he still didn't answer her question.

Si Ting's head slowly moved up from her neck, his hard black hair brushed across her cheek, stirring up ripples in the lake of her heart.

After such a laugh, he seemed like a different person.

Yes, how could he forget? What is Pei Lu afraid of? She is the bravest, otherwise how could she keep him.

More than once he found her sneaking to his door, just to keep him company.

I don't know when it started, but a different temperature slowly emerged there, and warmth slowly filled in. This silent and slow infiltration may seem insignificant, but day after day, it accumulates rich emotions unconsciously.

They were suppressed and stored in his heart, and were erased by his denial again and again.

Maybe it started from the moment the other party told him that he would not come back, or maybe it was even earlier, like a spark falling into the hot oil that slowly fills up his heart, once it is ignited, it can no longer be contained or stopped.

Si Ting's left hand was still clasped on her thigh, while the other hand was tightening her waist. This posture was like a ferocious beast in the sea that had confined its long-coveted prey in its territory, leaving no room for escape.

As he looked up, Pei Lu saw his bright eyes in the narrow space between them. The tacit understanding that had started several days ago was like a seed buried deep in her heart.

These eyes cast a magical and it sprouted from the , spell tip of her heart and blossomed into a beautiful flower.

Pei Lu's eyes were also sparkling, and her forehead was almost touching his. In such an intimate posture, she felt the love that was hidden by the other person.

So she laughed too.

She didn't understand why the two of them suddenly hugged each other and laughed foolishly, but she was happy.

She said, " You're not pretending anymore? "

Si Ting raised his eyebrows slightly: " What am I pretending to be? "

Pei Lu said: " You are such a hypocrite. "

He said: " That's not fake. "

Pei Lu still smiled.

She held the man's face, opened her mouth, finally stopped laughing, and wanted to say something.

But the man pinched her mouth mischievously, and gently pinched her up and down with two fingers into a little duck, as if he anticipated what she was going to say.

" I'll go first. "

His mask had been completely torn off, and his words had a hint of mischief, and also revealed a little bit of shallow love.

Pei Lu was unhappy and felt that he was quite competitive.

So when he said the word " I " , Pei Lu, who was more competitive than him, put her arms around the man's neck and kissed him.

The uneasy movements of the person in his arms stunned Si Ting, who was still a little nervous in his heart.

No matter how long he had lived as a monster, this was the first time he liked a girl.

He didn't expect that he would be ambushed like this.

When her soft lips touched his, the floral scent on her body also penetrated into his nostrils, but at this time, the man could no longer smell any floral scent, as he had lost the ability to think. Pei Lu raised her head and kissed the person she liked. After she rushed forward, she realized belatedly that she felt a little embarrassed, so she wanted to pull back after kissing him. However, her tactical retreat failed because she was hugged back by a stronger force, and the man who had attacked her hugged her and kissed her back.

The air slowly warmed up, and the warm light in the room almost turned into sweet honey syrup, flowing through every tiny gap.

Pei Lu gradually relaxed from the initial tenseness and felt sweet in her heart.

But he was a rookie after all, and after a while the corners of his eyes started to turn red and his breathing became a little rapid.

She exerted force with her arms and finally pushed the person away, and stood up from his legs. But because her body was weak from the kiss, she couldn't stand still and sat on the bed opposite.

She looked up at Si Ting again, and he was also sitting on the chair looking at her. Pei Lu's face was red. She moved the hand on the bedside, then reached out and grabbed the pale hand on the armrest of the chair.

She pinched the hand and moved it towards herself, then again, like a kitten stealing dried fish under the owner's nose.

She placed her other hand on top of that hand, holding it tightly, conveying her warmth, and whispered, " Now that I have stamped your approval, are you mine from now on? "

Si Ting looked at the girl's pink cheeks, and felt a little itchy in his heart, as if he had been tickled by a naughty feather. He turned his hand over and held the girl's, " Lulu, I may not think the same as you do. "

Pei Lu didn't expect that he didn't nod immediately. She drooped her eyes a little aggrieved, " What's it like? Let me see it now. "

Si Ting's eyes caught sight of the tightly closed bathroom door.

Pei Lu pointed at his heart and said, " I saw everything. I'm not afraid of you. "

But she doesn't know yet what this means.

But this is the first time she likes someone, she can't just not fight for it because of fear.

Caught in such an emotion, the stubbornness in her bones emerged again. She tightened her fingers and just stared at him.

Si Ting stared at the two people's hands clasped together, and suddenly felt that he had got the best thing.

For that kiss just now, he would be willing to die right now.

Seeing that he was silent, Pei Lu poked his chest and said, " Do you think I can't guess it myself? "

" You don't have to guess, I'll tell you. "

Si Ting moved closer to her and held her in his arms again.

Pei Lu looked up at him: " Then tell me the truth, starting with the first question, do you rest at night? "

This question has puzzled her for a long time.



" No. "

It is true.

Pei Lu touched his face with heartache, pulled him up and pushed him onto the bed.

" Why don't you sleep? "

Si Ting found this question difficult to answer. He considered it for a moment and said, "  
Because it is not necessary. "

" Then I need you to sleep now, will you listen to me? "

Si Ting thought her expression was a little funny, but he still pinched her cheek and said, " I'll  
listen to you. "

" Then sleep well tonight. "

" You have no more questions? "

Pei Lu said anxiously: " It's too late. I'll just ask one question a day. "

She pushed him down on the bed, and then she lay down beside him, holding her chin and  
looking at him: " Did you need to sleep before? "

" Yes. "

A long, long time ago, it was needed.

Pei Lu simply lay down next to him, one of her hands still tightly clasped with his. When she  
heard what he said, she patted him soothingly, " I'm sleepy now, can we sleep together? "

Si Ting stared at her for half a minute, with a hint of mockery in his eyes.

Pei Lu also realized belatedly that what she said seemed a bit ...

She actually didn't think about it, she was just very happy at the moment and didn't want to be  
alone.

There was just a hint of teasing in Si Ting's eyes, but the next second he opened the quilt on the  
bed and wrapped her up tightly like a silkworm cocoon, wrapping only her up. He himself was  
still lying beside the bed in his bathrobe.

The silkworm was wrapped up and held in a broad embrace, and yawned a little.

Her body was tired, but her spirit was still strong.

Does this mean she is no longer single?

" Go to sleep. "

Si Ting hugged her and gave her a light kiss on the forehead.

" Will you sleep with me? "

Si Ting closed his eyes: " Yeah. "

Pei Lu looked at him and had several questions in her mind, but all the question marks were not  
as important as the living person in front of her.

She just lay there, surrounded by the smell of safety, leaning in the most reassuring arms, and  
slowly fell asleep.

## Chapter 37

When the sunlight outside the curtains shone through the gap in her face , Pei Lu's long  
eyelashes trembled and she opened her eyes.

The person in front of her was still lying beside her. Her side felt heavy with a hand resting on it .  
Pei Lu was wrapped tightly and slept very comfortably. When she woke up, her little face was rosy and her eyes were watery.

As soon as she opened her eyes , the person she loved was lying next to her, with his eyes closed, looking like he was sleeping soundly.

Pei Lu thought she would not be able to sleep the whole night , but she fell asleep not long after being excited , and even snored in her sleep , so she didn't know when Si Ting fell asleep.

Pei Lu continued to lie there obediently , not moving, and looked at Si Ting's face carefully in the few rays of sunlight that came in from outside the curtains. Her eyes carefully passed over every strand of his hair, fell on his eyelashes, and fell on the delicate texture of his skin.

When he closed his eyes and fell asleep , he regained his harmless appearance. Even because his skin was abnormally white, his appearance added a sense of fragility and sickness.

Pei Lu looked for about five minutes, and finally stretched out a hand from under the quilt reluctantly . Her pink fingertips were like a switch to open the other person's eyes. Her fingertips almost poked the other person's cheek, and the fresh and warm boyfriend beside her opened his eyes.

Pei Lu's fingertips were warm in the quilt , but the other person's face was cold.

Pei Lu unwrapped her quilt and pulled the man inside . The cold air gave her goose bumps on her back, but she still hugged the man. Yes, she still wanted to take advantage of the handsome guy .

At first, the man's eyes only opened a crack, and in his slightly squinting pupils, a faint blue like the deep sea flashed by. Pei Lu couldn't help but cover those beautiful eyes with her fingertips. Si Ting felt his eyelids brushed by a hand lighter than a feather, and the gentle touch felt like it was brushing the tip of his heart.

He pinched the hand and kissed the pink fingertips. Then he saw that Pei Lu's peach-like face became even redder. Not only was it getting redder, but she was also slowly shrinking into the quilt. In the end, only a pair of eyes were exposed, blinking at him.

Si Ting was amused by her cute appearance.

Pei Lu felt like touching him when she saw him laughing. Suddenly, a hard arm hugged her waist, and then she fell into a slightly cold embrace. His chin rested on the top of her head, and her face was pressed against his chest. Because of that muffled laughter, his chest was vibrating, making half of her body stiff and numb.

Then he ruffled her hair mischievously.

Pei Lu finally reacted and raised her hands to resist.

On the first day Pei Lu was no longer single, she had a fight with her boyfriend on his bed. But she was very happy because she peeled off the man's fish skin and saw the man's core inside, although it was only a little bit.

But he was very different from his usual appearance of wearing a well-fitting suit and sitting elegantly at the dinner table. If she had to describe him, she felt that Si Ting was more lively than usual.

Pei Lu hugged his waist with her messy hair, raised her head and asked herself the second question: " Are you cold? Why do you always feel so cold? "

Si Ting twisted his slender fingers around her long hair and said nonchalantly, " I'm not human, so my body temperature is different from that of humans. "

Pei Lu had forgotten the one-a-day question and asked him again: " How old are you? "

This was a question she had been thinking about silently for a long time. She knew that the other party's way of calculating lifespan was different from others. She didn't care how much older or younger the other party was than her, as it was meaningless, but she cared about what the other party's lifespan was like.

Human life is too short. Once a wound is broken, it will bleed continuously. There is no such miraculous self-healing ability. Human life is too fragile. At the same time, people are greedy. Once they get something they like, they will desperately want to keep it with them for a long, long time.

The man's Adam's apple rolled up and down. This didn't seem to be a simple question.

After a while, she heard the other person sigh: " I can't remember clearly either. "

Pei Lu: "..."

But she heard a lot of incredible stories.

For example, the sea creatures in another world, the strict hierarchical and cruel rules of competition, and the endless struggle there.

Just as Pei Lu was listening with fascination, the story came to an abrupt end.

She grabbed the man by the collar and asked, " What happened next? "

Later, that was what happened after death, and Si Ting didn't know how to start.

Pei Lu didn't expect to find out all the other party's secrets at once, so she asked a question and got up.

Before pretending to be angry and rushing out of the other person's room, she glanced at the closed bathroom inconspicuously.

Because she was thinking about something, she didn't notice the faint smile in Si Ting's eyes when she left.

That smile came from the bottom of his heart, but when he smiled like this, the temperature of his body became colder and colder, the blood in his body was flowing backwards, and something was clamoring in his body.

Si Ting allowed himself to fall back onto the bed, his nose still filled with the fresh scent of the girl.

For Pei Lu, life seemed to have not changed much, but it had indeed changed. At least she would not stay in school all day.

If the studio couldn't do without her, she would actually like to be a love-brained person and stick to her boyfriend every day.

But their white moonlight is so popular that Ye Ke no longer has to worry about finding male actors. Once they become popular, countless handsome guys will extend olive branches to them. So Pei Lu has to look for many handsome guys every day and choose the male actor who will play fighting scenes with Jiang Jiang.

Fans affectionately ranked the Demon Lord, the Immortal Lord and others as the first and second concubines according to their order of appearance, and set up stalls to buy stocks in the comment section.

But after seeing so many handsome guys, Pei Lu felt that none of them were as good-looking as her boyfriend.

So today, she left work early under Ye Ke's roar.

Li Yeqiu never thought that he would succeed the day after Nicholas dragged Si Ting to give him random lessons.

But in fact he was not surprised at all. He had already noticed that these two people had such tendencies, but Pei Lu was just an ordinary person!

So Li Yeqiu was quite hesitant until Pei Lu came to him.

"Go out and play?" Li Yeqiu was surprised.

Seeing Pei Lu nod, Li Yeqiu scratched his head in confusion, "Why did you two ask me to go out and play?"

If he acts like a light bulb, Tingge will kill him.

Pei Lu frowned: "I want to, but he doesn't seem to want to."

She wanted to go out and play with Si Ting, the kind where the two of them could go to a strange place, wander around, and stay out all night, but Si Ting always found a way to get home on time.

She didn't know if it was her illusion, but this person liked staying in the house more and more, alone, and for longer and longer periods of time.

Pei Lu had a purpose. She had said long ago that she would peel off the opponent's fish skin, but it was too difficult.

As long as the other person stayed in the room with the door closed, she couldn't find out his secrets.

The closer she got to him, the harder it was for those clues she had learned before to be erased from her mind.

For example, he always stayed up all night, and his bathroom door was always closed. She almost broke in once, but was stopped by him without leaving a trace.

Then Pei Lu had a nightmare that night. She dreamed that the other party had returned to the state of death. Unlike the time when she felt the other party's life slowly disappearing with her own eyes, his body was invaded by an unspeakable thing and then slowly dissolved.

She started to get scared, she felt the other person must have a secret.

She didn't mind him having a secret, but she minded it being a secret that meant destruction.

"It's impossible for him not to be willing," Li Yeqiu retorted without thinking. Brother Ting hadn't come out to eat with them in the past two days, so it was obvious that these two had real feelings for each other.

"Then help me."

Li Yeqiu asked cautiously: "What do you want to do?"

Pei Lu said firmly: "Take him home all night!"

She wanted to know his little secret.

Li Yeqiu: "..."

Li Yeqiu scratched his head.

He didn't think that he could do anything that Pei Lu couldn't do.

"Anyway, just cooperate with me."

Since he didn't want to be outside with her, Li Yejiu asked him to leave. She would find a chance to go to the bathroom and see what was in there.

Li Yejiu pointed at himself, feeling a little innocent: " Then how do you want me to cooperate with you? "

" You'll tell him this later ..."

Pei Lu whispered in Li Yejiu's ear for a long time, and the two of them were seen talking by Si Ting who opened the office door and walked in.

Something flashed across his eyes, and the moment Li Yejiu met his eyes, he shuddered and immediately sat up straight.

When Pei Lu saw that she was caught, she immediately sat up straight.

Si Ting walked in, picked up the cold tea on the table, took a sip, and asked the two people: " What are you talking about? "

Pei Lu lifted her butt and moved over, then said with a laugh: " Let's talk about you. "

Si Ting looked at Li Yejiu again, looking very interested.

Li Yejiu was frightened by that look. He shrank up, holding an unread document and waving at the two people, forgetting everything they had just discussed: " Let's go, leave quickly, don't stay here. If someone doesn't know, they would think I'm abusing employee 007. "

Although Si Ting was not his employee.

Only then did Si Ting nod to Li Yejiu, took his windbreaker, and was ready to go with Pei Lu.

Pei Lu glared at Li Yejiu fiercely, shook his hand and asked: " Do you want to have a midnight snack? "

" No. "

Pei Lu was stunned.

Si Ting followed her lead in everything. It was like this in the past, and it was even more so in the past two days.

Even if he didn't want to eat, he should go with her.

Li Yejiu, holding the documents, quietly looked up at the two people stuck at the door.

Si Ting put on his windbreaker, looked at his stunned girlfriend slowly, tapped her forehead, and said, " We'll go out to sea later. "

Pei Lu didn't react.

The other party smiled at her and said, " I will take you out all night. "

Pei Lu: "..."

Suddenly I feel scared QAQ .

Li Yejiu: "..."

MD knew that Pei Lu was playing tricks on him!

## Chapter 38

Pei Lu was still stiff when she came out of the building . She thought Si Ting had heard their conversation.

She quickly ran two steps to catch up with the man, then pulled his arm and put it on her shoulders, and rubbed against his arms obediently.

Si Ting hugged her and shielded her from the cold wind blowing from the side . Seeing her like this, his heart felt a little itchy.

" Why do you want to go out to sea? "

Pei Lu raised her head from his arms.

Si Ting suddenly lowered his voice and said, " You are the client of the system. "

Pei Lu was stunned.

The man lowered his head and suddenly got very close to her , so close that she could feel the warm breath from him in this cool night.

The man still stared at her, " What does the client want to do? "

Pei Lu choked a little.

In fact, she didn't know either , because Si Ting never made her worry.

Si Ting smiled and said, " According to the rules , you have to instill love and peace in me , erase the darkness in my heart , and make the ' villain ' a good person. "

Pei Lu had already been pushed into the car by the other party, and said silently: " You are very good. "

" The system will not lie to you. They are the most fair executives. "

This was also a question Pei Lu had thought about. She grabbed the other person's clothes and asked anxiously: " If my mission is over , where will you go? "

Si Ting didn't answer.

In fact, he will die once her mission is completed.

That's what he's after.

The system told him at the beginning that what he was looking for was here , and that was the result calculated by the main brain. At first he was skeptical.

it turned out that the main brain was not wrong . It really figured out that once he grew a heart , the thing attached to his body would die along with him.

was eaten by " it " when he was cursed , and " it " can only attach itself to dead objects.

He had already lived beyond the normal lifespan of a sea creature, and the fact that his lost heart could grow back again was an incredible miracle. The heart could kill " it " , and similarly, without the curse that helped him maintain his vital signs, he would die even if he had a heart. Si Ting has been thinking about this question these days. Does he still want to die? Originally, he would have loved it.

But now he is a little reluctant.

So in order to survive, he had to do something.

He knew that Pei Lu had always been worried and wanted to understand him, but he couldn't tell her such a desperate thing like this.

To him, she was a beautiful flower blooming in the wilderness. This was the first time in her life that she bloomed for love. Since he selfishly picked her best flowering period, he could not and must not let this beautiful flower show the slightest sadness, nor could he let such a beautiful flowering period become an unforgettable painful memory in her life.

So he can't say.

But what is the most important thing for two people to be together? He has been in this world for quite some time. The basic standards of each world are roughly the same. No matter what world

or relationship you are facing, trust is always the most important thing. If there is not even the most basic trust between relationships, then this relationship is doomed to not last long .

So he couldn't keep it secret any longer.

Since it is impossible to hide it any longer, the best way to confess is to solve the problem.

That's what Si Ting thought.

Pei Lu didn't know what the other party had experienced in the past few days. When the fishy and salty sea breeze blew on her face, she felt refreshed.

She was originally curled up in the car and was almost asleep.

She went up to the deck, looked out at the boundless sea, and imagined from the stories Si Ting told her how he had lived in the sea in the past.

She was a little confused as to why Si Ting brought her onto the boat so late at night, but that didn't stop her from taking out her phone to take a photo of Ye Ke to show their love.

Ye Ke had been clamoring for Si Ting to treat her to a meal, but now that she was about to go to bed in the middle of the night and was fed a mouthful of dog food, she couldn't stand it anymore and angrily sent a bunch of emoticons to her best friend.

Pei Lule realized that Si Ting had disappeared after he got on the boat. She had been standing outside for so long, but he didn't come out to look for her, so she put away her phone and walked into the cabin.

Si Ting was standing with the captain, and the two were talking about something in the cabin.

Pei Lu just quietly leaned over the door to take a look, then ran back and picked some strawberries on the table.

The wind was quite strong tonight, and the waves were blowing up, causing the yacht to rise and fall. Pei Lu was biting a strawberry, and she didn't know when she had leaned against the window. She looked at the dark sea and felt that this night was a little dangerous.

When she heard the noise, she turned around with her cheeks puffed out and stretched out her hands to Si Ting.

Si Ting held her in his arms, and Pei Lu leaned in his cool embrace and looked up at him: "

Want to give me a surprise? "

There was also some smile in Si Ting's eyes: " Do you think it's a surprise? "

Pei Lu's fingertips picked at the buttons of his cuffs, and she said unhappily: " Is there anyone like you? You still want me to guess. "

Si Ting smiled, put his chin on the top of her head, and then said slowly: " I won't keep you guessing. "

Pei Lu silently digested these words and felt that this might not just refer to surprise.

" Lulu, I didn't answer your question just now, but I can tell you now. "

" Once your mission is accomplished, I will die. "

Pei Lu's heart, which had been excitedly waiting for a surprise, suddenly sank, because such content was beyond all her understanding. So in the few seconds when the other party said this, Pei Lu's mind was completely confused.

During these few seconds, she was shocked and wanted to ask the other party what this meant, but the arms holding her suddenly tightened their strength.

The voice in her ear asked her: " Do you remember that you are the client of the system? "

Pei Lu opened her mouth, but couldn't find her own voice.

Her eyes looked blankly through the other person's shoulder and at the endless black sea outside. She couldn't say the word " yes " at all .

Fortunately, Si Ting didn't really want to get this unimportant answer from her.

" But now, Lulu, I need you, and I want you to be my client. "

I don't know when it started, but the wind outside began to get stronger, and the yacht was drifting helplessly in the sea like a lonely leaf.

Pei Lu felt nothing. She could not feel the danger of the sea, nor the strong wind. She opened her round eyes, and the light in her eyes flickered under the flickering lights.

" I am a coward who is afraid of death now. Do you want to believe me? "

Pei Lu heard her own voice tremble: " How can I trust you? "

In her slow-moving brain, she had only just digested the fact of death that the other party had told her, so she had now lost the ability to think.

However, when she thought that the person who had silently accompanied her through the most difficult years would lie in a pool of blood, stop breathing, and lose all vitality like last time, her body could not stop shaking. She felt that the temperature in her body was dissipating bit by bit, and her heart had been frozen in ice.

Si Ting patted her back again and again, as if he was coaxing a child, " Don't be afraid, I have thought of a solution. "

There was some light in Pei Lu's confused eyes.

Si Ting waited for her to slowly digest the shock of this trip.

Unexpectedly, the light in Pei Lu's eyes slowly gathered, and she suddenly took a step back and stepped out of his arms.

Just when Si Ting thought she was frightened, her eyes suddenly became fierce.

Pei Lu gritted her teeth, jumped up, clamped her two slender legs around Si Ting's waist, hugged his neck and bit him.

" You think it's interesting, don't you? You're pretty cool. "

" What do you want to do? Beat me up and then give me a sweet date? "

Si Ting was stunned by the bite, and there was immediately a tooth mark on his neck. He was knocked back a step by Pei Lu, and reached out to catch the person, letting Pei Lu make a fuss and bite him.

But Pei Lu soon ran out of energy to make a fuss.

Because she knew that Si Ting might be telling the truth.

She had known for a long time that he was abnormal. Although the bathroom door was closed, red marks could still be seen in the gap at the bottom of the door. The skin on his heart kept healing on his hands, and the position of the scales was different each time.

She leaned on his shoulder and asked weakly, " What have you thought of? "

The author has something to say:

Sorry everyone!! I had to go to the hospital twice these two days so the update is not timely. I will try to adjust it as soon as possible.



## Chapter 39

Si Ting whispered something in her ear.

Pei Lu only understood part of it . She didn't know what would happen next, but at this moment she had only one thought in her mind.

If the commission given to her by the system leads to Si Ting's death, then she would rather give up this commission .

After the man whispered in her ear , the strength in his hands tightened, and his eyes became deep . He stared at her , not missing the slightest change in her expression. His aura became somewhat dangerous, and because of the lighting , his tall figure cast a shadow on Pei Lu's face , covering the light in her eyes.

But this made Pei Lu feel inexplicably relieved , because the other party's attitude clearly showed that he was afraid, afraid of leaving.

Pei Lu grabbed his arm and smiled.

Because she was finally not the only one who was worried, because the other person was also afraid.

Si Ting looked at her in surprise , as if he didn't understand why she could laugh in such a situation.

Pei Lu brushed the strands of hair off his forehead and said with a smile: " I am very happy because you can trust me. "

Pei Lu thought, if she could see the system now , she would still say to the system, you see, he is very well behaved.

Although the " good " you say is completely different from what the system thinks .

Si Ting lowered his head , kissed her tender red lips, and then ruffled her hair.

The wind outside was getting stronger and stronger. Pei Lu watched with her own eyes as the hand placed on her head grew hideous dark blood vessels. They grew wildly under the transparent skin like tree roots, quickly sucking the vitality of this body.

For a moment, Pei Lu's eyes were filled with only those coiled dark monsters. Her consciousness reversed, her body was already in the boat, but her consciousness was brought into a void.

Something was cursing in her ears with a sharp noise.

" Do you understand what a terrible person he is? I have never seen a human being as stupid and ridiculous as you. How can you believe that a monster has a heart? "

The voice was cold and ethereal, like a poisonous snake spitting out its tongue, smiling coldly and mockingly at her in her ear.

At the same time, its poisonous characters flowed into her ears from the strings, and Pei Lu finally saw everything she was curious about.

She saw Si Ting lying alone in the cold trench, his body being devoured and controlled bit by bit by some strange thing. That thing took away his heart, causing him to be reborn in pain, manipulating him and using his body to cross the barriers of space and dimension to reap lives in various worlds.

He is the tyrant of the sea, and the deep sea is his glorious dynasty. He can rule over all creatures and control them from getting involved in unnecessary disputes.

" See? Do you still think he is a harmless person? Do you dare to stay with such a person? "

Pei Lu's mind was violently instilled with such images, and she fell into a long silence. The curse thought it had succeeded and that its puppet would soon be abandoned by this woman. As long as the other party's heart froze and solidified again, it could regain control. If it weren't for help, it really wouldn't want to lose such a useful host. But the girl who had been silent all the time suddenly raised her head when it was about to laugh heartily.

" What's wrong with you? "

" thing " that sealed off the entire space .

If you look closely, you will see layers of indescribable stuff that is so dark blue that it is almost black, and there are also some different colors mixed in it. It makes people feel uncomfortable if they look at it for a long time.

Pei Lu simply covered her eyes, but her tone was still full of doubt: " Didn't you do that? Why are you blaming everyone else for it? "

If Si Ting had known that this would be the result of falling into the gloomy deep sea trench, he would definitely prefer to die.

The thing didn't seem to expect that she would ask it back. The cold voice paused for a second and then became sharp.

It is an irrational creature to begin with, otherwise it would not have tried every means to master the secret of crossing space and brutally slaughtered people everywhere. In the past two days, due to Si Ting's resistance, its patience has been almost exhausted. In fact, its current ease is just an act.

These days, the vibrant vitality bursting out of the puppet Si Ting's body has been torturing it. Every time they confront each other, both sides suffer losses. There was even one time when it lost its mind and was excluded from his body!

Although it was only a moment, it made it realize that it could not go on like this, because it was really not afraid of death.

Just because of a damn little girl he has only known for a few months, he is not afraid of death! So it screamed at the top of its lungs.

The headache came again, but Pei Lu felt someone holding her tightly.

In the storm, the small yacht was drifting helplessly. Next to the porthole, two shadows hugged each other and did not sway with the hull. A thick curse attached to them like some dirt, throwing this narrow boat into the crack of space.

The boundless dark color continued to spread, slowly swallowing up the two people and then the ship.

" You are so ridiculous. How long have you known each other? True love is cunning and fickle. There are many fools in your human society who love each other madly, but how many of them can really stay together until the end? "

" You've only been together for a few days. If you keep doing stupid things, you might not be able to leave this ship alive today! "

Pei Lu also sneered. She once again stared at the strange curses that surrounded her, and then said calmly: " You think too highly of him, and you underestimate me too much. Do you think I am taking risks here just for a man? "

" I like him now, he belongs to me, so I won't allow the person I like to be deprived of his life by a weird thing like you. "

" If I like him for one day, it's my business. If I like him for a hundred years, it's none of your business. Even if I hate him the next second, as long as he belongs to me in this second, I will do what I want to do and will not allow others to interfere in my affairs. "

Life is too unpredictable. Pei Lu now deeply understands the meaning of this sentence.

People grow up, and you never know when the people around you will leave you, and what unexpected things you will encounter.

So in this short yet long life, if there is a bright flower blooming, you must grab it. Even if it only blooms for a minute or a second, grab it, and your whole life will be gorgeous because of such brilliance.

It may wither, but it will leave you with greater courage.

She is a person dominated by her own emotions. Many times she is unable to make rational decisions. She dares to love and hate. This is her choice, and she will not regret it.

Curse was going crazy.

It's really going crazy.

Its confrontation with Si Ting had already reached the limit, and it knew that it could hear these words, and its puppets could hear them too.

The man was now fascinated by this woman, and was driven crazy by her breathtaking courage. The vigorous vitality that almost overflowed from her chest was like sulfuric acid to him, burning away his mark inch by inch.

It began to struggle again, wanting to die together with its puppet.

But it only realized at this moment that when it was hysterically interfering with Pei Lu's thinking in her ear and trying to sow discord, Si Ting had taken advantage of its collapse and distraction and tried to peel it off again.

His body was already cold and stiff. In this vast rift of time and space, it flowed into the deep sea, carrying with it the rotten bones on the seabed and causing storms.

I want to curse you, are you sick? There is no war to fight in this desolate and deserted space.

But it immediately realized that it was the one who was sick, and it was a stupid disease.

Because Si Ting did not exile it to control those dead things, he took advantage of his own collapse and distraction to manipulate it to contact the thing called " Master Brain " ! !

Pei Lu, who was trapped in a strange space by it, saw it begin to tremble.

At the same time, she also heard a familiar voice. It was the system she was dealing with that was squeaking.

The mastermind responsible for maintaining order in all time and space sent the system over because they detected that the troublesome big devil had started to cause trouble again.

Previously, that thing had locked her up tightly, so she couldn't hear any sound at all. Si Ting asked her to help piss that thing off to death, so she focused on pissing it off to death.

so .....

This thing is shaking like this now, is it because she is mad at me?

Just as Pei Lu was thinking about this question, the system seemed to have finally broken through some barriers and came to their side.

But now it can only roar: " What are you doing? Do you want to breach the contract?! "

The curse was also roaring: " Si Ting, you dare to use me!! "

It began to fall into unreasonable fear because its puppet, the cunning mermaid, was fiddling with it like a computer virus, using it to invade the main brain of another space along the system again.

Why do I say " again " ? Because the first time, he used himself to go back to that prison and moved two boxes of jewelry.

But now it suddenly realized that it might be a temptation with a purpose. This man didn't want money. Maybe he had been secretly looking for a way to get rid of it a long time ago! !

As Pei Lu's imprisoned consciousness slowly released, she returned to reality.

In reality, she and Si Ting were still in a quiet embrace, but they were surrounded by something black. She couldn't see what was happening around her, but she felt that the person who was hugging her was disappearing bit by bit.

The system was still roaring as it collapsed. No one knew what severe blow the curse had suffered. The short and cute little system had even drowned out its screams.

She heard the system's impotent rage: " What did you do to the mastermind?? "

She also heard the man's calm reply.

" Haven't you always wanted to see what it is that can take me across space and keep me immortal? Since the smartest person in the world is the Mastermind, why not let it take a look? "

The system continued to roar: " Madman! What on earth do you want to do? Are you going to drag us down with you? "

They really wanted to solve the big problem of Si Ting, but they didn't want to drag everyone down with him!!

Pei Lu heard the man laughing, just like the first time he buried his head in her shoulder, laughing so hard that his whole body was shaking.

" I'm just helping. I've already put it into the main brain's program. Once you parse it, you can catch this monster that can cross space and cause chaos. "

The system choked.

That's true.

But this is too risky!!

When they first captured Si Ting, they did consider this possibility.

But firstly, they couldn't separate " it " from Si Ting's body, and secondly, even if they could separate it, they were not sure they could control that evil thing.

But it would never have thought that Si Ting actually found a way to peel it off, and they would be forced to do it by Si Ting! !

Compared to the furious system, Si Ting, who was being called a madman by the system, was very calm.

Pei Lu heard him say: " Now the Mastermind is the same as me. We are cursed together, so you can't let me die. "

Pei Lu: "..."

She finally understood why her partner was in the most stringent cell in the system.

## Chapter 40

" wait for me. "

That was the last sentence Pei Lu heard.

Although the system was getting angrier , its voice was also getting smaller and smaller, and the presence of the person holding her was getting weaker and weaker.

Pei Lu seemed to realize something, so her hands around Si Ting began to tighten.

But it seemed to be useless , the other person seemed to be melting bit by bit . Pei Lu began to panic, but no matter how tightly she held him , it was useless , he was still disappearing bit by bit.

The sense of reality gradually became stronger , and Pei Lu felt dizzy. She finally realized that she was standing on a boat , and the boat was still shaking violently.

Because she suddenly woke up , she staggered and fell to the ground , and there was no trace of Si Ting opposite her.

Pei Lu looked blankly at the empty ship, at the porthole through which she could see the night sky, and at the waves that were slowly receding.

Until the cabin chef patted her shoulder and asked with a worried look: " Ms. Pei , are you okay? "

Pei Lu turned around blankly. The chef did not notice anything unusual and just said, " The waves were a bit big just now. You might be seasick . Why don't you go back and rest for a while? "

The man didn't see Si Ting here, nor did he show any surprise. He just thought he was in the room.

Pei Lu asked him in a daze: " What happened just now? "

The man smiled and said, " Don't worry , this level of wind won't affect us. "

He had no idea what had just happened.

Pei Lu let out a breath and finally stood up from the ground.

She returned to her room in silence and lay in bed all night without sleeping.

The system disappeared, Si Ting also disappeared, she curled herself up and quietly wondered how long this " wait " would take.

Pei Lu felt that the guy didn't dare to let her wait too long.

When it was almost dawn, she finally climbed out of bed with a layer of bruises on her head.

She stood on the deck in the early morning, feeling the cool breeze, looking at the rising sun in the sky, and waiting for the ship to dock.

Li Yeqiu was wearing a pair of cool sunglasses and leaning against his sports car with his hands in his pockets. As soon as he saw Pei Lu, he ran over with a mouthful of white teeth grinning.

" Why are you here? " Pei Lu was wearing a large windbreaker that Si Ting had taken off when he got on the boat last night.

" Brother Ting asked me to pick you up yesterday. "

Li Ye qiu opened the car door for her and looked at the yacht with some curiosity.

Is Tingge going back to the sea?

Is there really such a legendary thing in the sea? ?

This was the question he had never dared to ask.

Pei Lu got into the car listlessly. Seeing Li Ye qiu looking at her again and again, she turned her head away with dead eyes. " Can you drive properly? "

" I'm driving ..."

Li Ye qiu defended himself, but he couldn't help but look at Pei Lu again and again.

Pei Lu rolled her eyes weakly, then said, " You want to ask where he went? "

Li Ye qiu became excited: " Yes, yes, that's what I wanted to ask. "

In fact, he was extremely curious about Si Ting's origins, but he didn't know who to ask.

Pei Lu spoke slowly: " Actually ..."

As soon as she opened her mouth, something invisible muffled her voice, and she understood that she was definitely not allowed to say it.

Li Ye qiu pricked up his ears and waited for a long time, and finally heard Pei Lu say: " Actually, I don't know either. "

Li Ye qiu: "..."

Li Ye qiu thought she was lying.

But when Pei Lu spoke just now, he heard nothing. Li Ye qiu felt that it must be some kind of magical quantum mechanics that prevented him from finding out the truth.

If you don't know, then just don't know.

Looking at Pei Lu's weak appearance, you can tell that nothing good might have happened.

" Are you okay? Do you want to go have breakfast? "

" No, I want to go back to sleep first. "

Pei Lu said this and yawned.

It's easy to have wild thoughts when you're alone, just like last night, so Pei Lu simply asked Li Ye qiu to send her to Ye Ke.

Ye Ke hadn't gotten up yet. She loved staying up late and sleeping in. When Pei Lu came to her house, she opened the door without even opening her eyes. She floated back and fell directly on her bed.

Pei Lu opened her closet with ease, picked out a set of pajamas, and then lay down next to her.

Ye Ke turned over in a daze, and realized something was wrong. He leaned his head against hers and asked in a low voice: " What's wrong? "

Pei Lu yawned, hugged her arm and muttered softly: " We're out to sea, I'm sleepy. "

There was a look of confusion in Ye Ke's eyes. He had already forgotten the photos he saw yesterday. He didn't know what going out to sea meant, but Pei Lu had already fallen asleep.

When Pei Lu woke up, her best friend had already bought her a delicious lunch. She was awakened by the smell.

Ye Ke casually put on a bun and took the takeaway back to the bedroom. Seeing that she was awake, he lifted his eyelids and asked her: " Why do you come to my place when you have a mansion to live in? Aren't you busy dating? "

Pei Lu opened the takeaway box with a worried look on her face, and then inserted the straw into the milk tea cup and took a sip. Then she said, " My boyfriend is at his parents' house. Let me wait for him to come back. "

Ye Ke: "..."

Ye Ke looked down on me: " Look at your useless appearance, I thought you were something else. "

Pei Lu didn't dare to say how far away her mother's home was . Her WeChat was not working and she couldn't contact anyone at all.

She didn't want to be alone, so she stayed at Ye Ke's place for several days. It was then that she realized that she was not used to being alone. Even if that person didn't communicate with her normally, she felt at ease as long as she knew there was someone there.

Pei Lu cheered up a little after drinking the sweet milk tea. Fortunately, she was very busy recently and had no time to let her emotions run wild.

She had sporadic classes to attend at school, and her roommates also started their internships one after another, so they were together less and less. The popularity of her and Ye Ke's "White Moonlight" continued to rise, and they had already earned enough business fees.

Up to now, the number of fans of the studio account has exceeded one million, and fans jokingly call it the "fan-growing maniac."

Ye Ke still felt unsatisfied after filming the short drama and wanted to make a serious TV series. She initially came up with this plan because she had no money. Now that she has money, Pei Lu naturally starts to choose scripts for her.

She didn't know how long this busy life lasted, was it half a month or a month.

Anyway, one day after work, Pei Lu, who was still staying at someone else's house, came back to get some clothes to change into, and suddenly there was a " ding " sound in her head, and a familiar voice rang out.

" Hello host, do you still remember me? "

A mechanical sound rang out, and a cute little robot appeared at her feet.

Pei Lu was so shocked that she stepped back repeatedly and the bag in her hand fell out of her hand.

She blinked her eyes subconsciously, and seeing that the little robot was still standing at her feet, she took a deep breath and realized something.

She trembled and said, " Of course I remember. "

"... what about him? "

The system suddenly became serious: " Host, Si Ting is still alive, but there was a small accident. "

" You have to understand. After all, we have never encountered such a complex virus. We have to ensure that the host is alive while disassembling the virus. We tried our best. "

Pei Lu: "..."

Pei Lu took a second to digest it and realized that this virus was probably the thing that had been fanning the flames in her ears that day.

Pei Lu couldn't wait to ask: " What little accident? "

The system choked. " He has lost his memory. "

Pei Lu: " ? "

" But amnesia is only temporary! He will slowly remember it, and he will remember it soon!!  
"

Before Pei Lu could open her mouth, the system said, " He has shrunk. "

Pei Lu: " ? "

The system said seriously: " This is also a side effect of the operation. He only remembers things before his death. "

Pei Lu: "..."

System: " That's all. The virus is very useful to us, so we have decided after an internal meeting to cancel Si Ting's evidence. From now on, he will be handed over to you. "

Pei Lu: "..."

The system finished its work and slipped away. At the same time, a loud noise was heard from the bathroom.

Pei Lu was startled, and hurried upstairs and pushed open Si Ting's room.

The bathtub in Si Ting's bathroom is five meters in size. It was originally built by connecting two rooms.

When Pei Lu made the arrangements, she took into account that he was a non-human being and might have needs that humans did not have.

But ever since he regained consciousness, he has never shown his fish tail in front of her.

So Pei Lu once thought that he was redundant.

But now, she doesn't think so.

In the bathtub, a handsome mermaid was lying on the edge, looking at this strange world warily.

Hearing the noise, his dangerous eyes narrowed and looked in her direction.

Pei Lu: "..."

hiss .....

Such a young handsome guy!!

## Chapter 41

Si Ting observed everything around him vigilantly . The things here were quite unfamiliar, but the strange thing was that when he looked at the chandelier on the ceiling or the silver faucet on the wall , he could remember the function of these things in his mind.

Si Ting didn't know why he was in the sea clan's palace one second and came to this strange place the next.

But it is very quiet here , there are no storms , no undercurrents, no fighting . There is a light fragrance in the air that is different from the sea , and there is a human being who looks very delicate and thin.

Si Ting lay there, looking at the girl who was staring at him.

When he looked at Pei Lu , Pei Lu was also looking at him.

In fact, if you look closely , the current Si Ting has not changed significantly from what she remembered . If you really want to say what is different ...



That should be the temperament.

The original Si Ting was restrained and depressed, but the Si Ting in front of him had a look of high spirits between his brows.

According to the system, he who had forgotten his memories after death had no memory of the painful experience of becoming a puppet. She also heard his story from the other party, that he relied on his own fists step by step to become the leader.

According to the standards of their human society, he would be considered a great general.

No wonder there is a sense of pride between his brows.

Pei Lu took two steps forward, knelt outside the bathtub, faced him, and looked at him curiously.

I have to say that with this kind of vitality, Si Ting seems to be a lot younger, like a young man full of vigor and vitality.

Pei Lu has been dreaming about her boyfriend who disappeared just a few days after she got him. She misses him so much that she wants to see every hair on his head.

She didn't mind the other person's amnesia at all. Even if he didn't remember her, she believed that no one could replace her between them.

Pei Lu happily rested her elbows on the edge of the bathtub and stared at the mermaid, which made the vigilant Si Ting feel more and more uncomfortable.

The mermaid slowly backed away, feeling quite uncomfortable being stared at by those bright big eyes. He stretched out his hand, frowned, raised a finger, and poked it against the girl's forehead, wanting her to stay away from him.

Because this girl seemed to be some incredible killer. She had implanted some magic into herself without making a sound. He was clearly in cold water, but his body felt like it was on fire.

Pei Lu was poked on the forehead by him and puffed her cheeks unhappily.

She pushed against his fingers and continued to move forward, staring and saying, "Why, don't you want to see me?"

The other person's voice was very sweet, and the ending tone was deliberately drawn out, as if he was acting coquettishly.

Si Ting's body trembled, and a strange electric current slowly rushed into his chest from the bottom up. The fingertips touching the girl's forehead also became a little hot because they were infected by the other party's heat.

Si Ting frowned, thinking that this human was a little weird.

He simply stretched out his other hand, held up the girl's fair face, and asked her condescendingly: "Who are you?"

As soon as he opened his mouth, he was stunned again. This was not the language of the sea people.

Pei Lu held his face in his hands, but she did not resist. She pouted and said, "Who am I? You can't figure it out yourself. If I don't tell you, you can just guess it yourself."

Si Ting's brows furrowed even more tightly.

Why is this little human girl so cunning?

He pinched her soft white face and asked her: "Why did they send me to this place?"

Pei Luyi: "I won't tell you, you guess it yourself."

Si Ting: "..."

Pei Lu proudly twisted his fingers to make him release her face, then poked his face and said, "Let me make it clear first, this is my house. You can't go anywhere else now, so you can only live here. So you have to rely on me for support now, and you have to be obedient. "

Si Ting looked at her.

Pei Lu groaned and brought a small stool from outside, then sat down beside the bathtub and asked curiously: " Where are you from? "

She already knew the answers to these questions, but she still wanted to hear them. She wondered if Si Ting would give any unexpected surprises when answering the same questions this time.

Si Ting felt that this little girl was very difficult to deal with, but he seemed unable to refuse her. His eyes were fixed on her thin neck. He felt that he could break her neck with one hand, but he would not do that.

He thought about it and felt that what the other party said seemed to make sense.

He didn't understand this world. If all the strangers walked on two legs, then he wouldn't even be able to get around. So he could only answer her: " I come from the sea. "

As for which sea it was, his mind was still a little confused and there were many vague ideas, so he didn't say much.

Pei Lu's questions were totally unrelated. She just asked about the other person's background and then asked, " Are you married? "

Si Ting thought about the meaning of " marriage " for a moment , then raised his eyebrows and said, " We don't need to get married. "

The sea people are always at war. Their means of reproduction are too slow and there is a risk of not being able to keep their offspring. This method has long been outdated, unless two people are really attracted to each other. The sea people are belligerent, both men and women, so few people fall in love.

Si Ting was not interested in this kind of thing, so he said: " Our children grow out of the warmest seabed, so they don't need to fall in love. "

He grew out of an eggshell on the seabed.

" puff ....."

Pei Lu couldn't hold it back.

She really didn't expect it.

Because she had never asked this question before.

So she asked with interest: " How can you give birth to a baby on the seabed? Do you bury it directly in the soil? "

Si Ting raised his eyebrows: " We have eggs. "

" Where do eggs come from? "

So, Si Ting described to her the " high technology " of the sea people . Their tree of life is a very magical thing that can cultivate sea people. Once the eggs growing on the tree reach a certain stage, they will be placed on the designated seabed by special personnel.

The seabed of a certain sea area has a very special energy that can make their offspring become very strong, which is an advantage that human reproduction cannot compare to.

Pei Lu was so delighted that she even gestured to him when they talked about something exciting. The gloom from a while ago was swept away and her eyes were bright again.

Si Ting also slowly let down his guard and began to accept this world. He had a subtle feeling that he came here just for this girl.

After only being here for half a day, he began to fall in love with this peaceful and beautiful world. Before she knew it, it was getting dark outside. Pei Lu's waist felt a little sore. She stood up and stretched, then rolled up her sleeves excitedly, " Wait for me, I'll make you some noodles. "

Si Ting really likes her lasagna with meat sauce. It can be seen that he is happier when eating it than eating takeout, but she is lazy and has only made it twice. Si Ting never asks her to cook. But Pei Lu was in a good mood today and she wanted to do it.

But as soon as she turned around and took a step, someone grabbed her wrist.

Pei Lu looked back in confusion, and the man asked her unhappily: " Where are you going? "

Pei Lu said: " I'll get you something to eat. Aren't you hungry? "

Si Ting's eyes darkened.

He looked toward the door.

As long as Pei Lu stepped over the door frame, she would disappear here.

He didn't think there was anything wrong with it before, but now, in just half a day, Si Ting felt a little reluctant.

He stared at the door, thinking about the possibility of blocking it tightly with water.

Pei Lu pulled at her wrist but failed to free it. She spread her hands helplessly and said, " How can I cook like this? "

Si Ting seemed to be indifferent to the idea of " cooking " and still looked at her like that.

All right.

Pei Lu shrugged and ordered takeout.

She felt that this small bench was not comfortable, so she ran out again. This time she ran out so suddenly that she disappeared in two steps. Si Ting didn't have time to react.

He looked unhappy, staring at the direction of the door. At the same time, a puddle of water on the ground slowly spread outwards, across the white tiles, across the door, through the carpet, and saw Pei Lu pushing a small sofa.

The puddle of water was like an invisible big hand pulling the sofa towards the bathroom, leaving Pei Lu stunned.

After she realized what was happening, she quickly ran two steps to catch up.

At this time, the sofa had been dragged to the side of the bathtub, and the water stains passed over the carpet without leaving any wet marks, as if they had never been there.

Pei Lu lay on the back of the sofa and looked at him: " You can also perform magic. "

Si Ting felt that this was not a magic trick, but as a person from the sea, it was not surprising that he had some ability to control water.

Pei Lu collapsed on the sofa again, and brought a tablet to Si Ting, asking him to " review " this world, and also ordered milk tea for him.

After all, he had been here once, and some memories had already been ingrained in his bones, so Si Ting could follow his instinct to click on the familiar icons and use chopsticks.

Pei Lu was surprised to find that Si Ting preferred sweet things at this time. In the past, he always looked calm no matter what he ate. Unless Pei Lu asked for it himself or he particularly liked it, it was difficult to tell his preference by observation.

But now, the other party obviously prefers sweeter milk tea, and is faster at eating cakes than spicy chicken wings.

He is a little more casual than before, showing no restraint when it comes to the things he likes.

Pei Lu was happy and poured him a glass of sour and sweet grape juice.

The other party didn't complain about the large amount of drinks and finished everything he was given.

Pei Lu was overjoyed and thought he looked so cute.

She also took out her old cell phone and asked the other person to play PUBG with her.

Under normal circumstances, she would not drag Si Ting to play games.

Si Ting held his phone and followed her steps to log in, form a team, and jump out of the plane.

It's not that he thinks playing games is interesting, he just feels happy doing anything with girls.

Until the sun set, the sky outside turned black, and the stars rose high in the night sky, Pei Lu finally felt sleepy.

She pushed aside the small table with a mess of things on it, yawned and said, " I have to go.

Are you going to sleep here tonight? "

The mermaid's ears hidden under her hair moved, and she was quite sensitive to the word " go " .

He narrowed his eyes and watched the other person yawn, and his mind naturally thought of the girl sleeping in bed.

Then he realized solemnly that it would be a very, very long time, longer than pushing the sofa back a thousand times.

So he stretched out his arms and pulled the girl on the sofa into the water.

Pei Lu: "..."

## Chapter 42

Pei Lu was unexpectedly dragged into the water by the other party . She tested the water temperature and it was very cold. At that time, she was still thinking that this was only Si Ting .

If it was her who soaked in the water , she would definitely be frozen to death.

But she was not frozen to death . When the pair of strong arms held her and pulled her into the water, she did not feel freezing cold. On the contrary , when her skin touched theirs , she felt like she was burning.

She fell into the pool , splashing crystal water and soaking the small sofa next to the bathtub.

Pei Lu's home clothes were a soft skirt. She had just been sitting on the sofa with her slender legs swinging. Now she fell into the water, and the hem of her skirt was stretched out like a flower. Her knees touched the hard black scales , causing goose bumps to form on her skin.

Pei Lu's fair skin turned red. The cold and sharp scales aroused her sensitivity. She was so frightened that her eyes turned red. She clung to the mermaid's upper arm with both hands and did not dare to sit on the long tail.

Si Ting thought she wanted to run away, so he hugged her in his arms and pressed her on his " legs " .

Pei Lu's face had turned from pink to really red , so red that it looked like smoke was coming out of it.

She lowered her head , and Si Ting could only see the lovely swirl on the top of her hair.

He raised his eyebrows , thinking that the girl didn't look like she wanted to leave. He pinched her face which was almost burned, and his heart beat faster.

It was the first time that Pei Lu had such close contact with Si Ting, their skin touching, and her thin layer of clothing had been soaked. She lowered her head so low that she could naturally hear the other person's strong heartbeat.

In an instant, all the beautiful thoughts and shy feelings in Pei Lu's mind disappeared, and an inexplicable feeling of emotion surged in her heart.

Until this moment, when she felt that strong heartbeat, she had never realized so clearly that her Si Ting was finally back, back intact.

Pei Lu's hand slowly slid down the man's arm, and then tightened around his strong back. She buried her head in the man's chest, close to his heart, and hugged him tightly.

Now, it was Si Ting's turn to be at a loss, because he felt a burning wetness in his heart. It was not the feeling of water, but like tears.

He forcefully lifted the girl's head, looked at her wet eyes, and unskillfully reached out to wipe away the tears from the corners of her eyes.

Pei Lu pursed her lips, suddenly straightened up and kissed the mermaid on the chin.

As soon as the soft lips touched Li, Si Ting's body felt numb and itchy as if he had been electrocuted. Countless fragments flashed through his mind, those fragments were beautiful and intimate.

His big hands were still holding her face, so he lowered his head and kissed her tender red lips.

Pei Lu happily hugged him and kissed him back, just like that night when they first exchanged their feelings.

Si Ting was infected by her excitement. Although he didn't know why she was so out of control, he felt a little distressed. So he stroked her hair gently and soothed her with a low and ancient song.

That was the song of the sea people, one of the few peaceful tunes. The mermaid's deep voice, with its simple and complicated pronunciation, echoed lightly in this quiet space.

Pei Lu felt herself wrapped in safety and warmth, and actually fell asleep like that.

When she woke up the next day, she was sleeping on the mattress.

Um .....

Not really a mattress either.

When Pei Lu sat up in a daze, Si Ting was still lying beside the bathtub, staring at her without blinking.

Pei Lu touched the cushion under his butt. It was the sofa cushion on the first floor, which he had pulled out and brought here.

She poked the man's arm in dissatisfaction, rolled up her quilt and said, " You just let me sleep on the floor. "

Although it wasn't cold, Pei Lu still wanted to find fault.

Just as she finished finding fault, her cell phone rang. It was the alarm she had set early in the morning. Normally, she was supposed to go to class today.

When her cell phone rang, Si Ting naturally saw the message on it. He stared at the alarm clock for a while and suddenly had a bad feeling.

Sure enough, Pei Lu raised her phone and said, " I almost forgot. I have classes today. "

Si Ting stretched out his hand and grabbed her wrist, his resistance was quite obvious.

Pei Lu poked him and said, " Why are you so clingy? If I don't attend class, I'll lose credits. "

The mermaid really thought about it seriously, and then said: " You can find someone to help you sign in. "

He remembered that this was okay.

Pei Lu: "..."

Why don't you learn well?

She said seriously, " Time and knowledge are both money. Not only do I have to go to class, I also have to work. If I don't work, how can I support you? You can't go anywhere now. "

Si Ting thought about it seriously again, and then he moved several broken boxes out of the water.

Pei Lu thought those boxes looked familiar, so her eyes twitched as she looked at them.

She looked into the bathtub and saw clear water that was as deep as the bottom. There was nothing in it, but he had just taken the box out of the water.

Pei Lu asked him: "... Can you perform magic? "

Could it be that the curse has not been completely removed?

" These are my things. " Si Ting pushed the box towards her, then raised his chin and said very reasonably, " These can be exchanged for money. You are not allowed to go to school. "

Pei Lu: "..."

Pei Lu opened a small wooden box with a dull face, and the things inside blinded her eyes again. She took a deep breath, then slapped the box back on, not knowing if it was because she had seen it before, so she felt numb, and instead of feeling the joy of the burden, she even felt a sense of sadness.

——There are so many of them, they definitely can't be kept in a bank safe.

Seeing that she didn't seem happy, Si Ting became serious again, frowning and thinking about how he could keep her.

Apart from these stones, he seemed to have nothing else.

Pei Lu coughed, moved the boxes aside, and said to him, " I'm going to make a phone call. "

In fact, even if Si Ting didn't say it, she would not leave. Not to mention that she was not at ease leaving him here alone, she was actually just like him and didn't want to be separated from him for a second.

But Si Ting didn't have the ability to read minds, so he looked at Pei Lu warily.

Pei Lu had no choice but to reach out and pat the merman on the head: " Be good and wait for me. I'll be back soon. "

Who knew that this disobedient big fish not only did not behave well, but also grabbed her wrist.

Pei Lu pretended to be unhappy and bared her teeth at him, so fierce!

But Si Ting was touched by her cuteness. He reached out and pulled her into his arms again, and kissed her on the top of her head.

Pei Lu pushed him away fiercely, her hair had been messed up by the other party, and now she looked like a little lunatic.

She was so angry that she pointed at the person in the water and kept saying "you you you" for a long time. Seeing that there was no time left, she could only sit on the mat and fight angrily.

In fact, she wanted to go out and change her clothes. This skirt was too terrible. She blushed and her heart beat fast when she thought of the scene of being pulled into the water yesterday. But it seems that it is not working. The fish in front of him doesn't seem to be a fish. It is a big clingy creature.

So Pei Lu made the call.

She put down the phone and asked him: "Can't you walk anymore?"

She remembered that this person was able to walk out of the bathtub by himself on the first day he came here.

Si Ting shook his head without hesitation.

He didn't say it. In fact, when Pei Lu fell asleep, he looked at her slender legs and tried it himself. In fact, he could walk out by himself, but he felt that the way they were now was just right. Pei Lu could only stay with him and could not go anywhere, nor would she see anyone else.

Pei Lu saw him shaking his head, not realizing at all that he was lying cunningly. She thought about it and felt that it was fine now.

It was Li Yejiu who asked her how she had been doing over the past two days.

Li Yejiu has helped her a lot recently. He didn't ask what happened to Si Ting, but he always cared about her and told her to ask him for help if she had any problems.

So Pei Lu thought about it and sent a text message to the other party to let him know that Si Ting had returned.

The other party did not reply immediately. Pei Lu remembered the circle of friends that Li Yejiu posted. The other party should be discussing business abroad now.

Li Zhiqiu had been severely punished by Li Yejiu several times, and the things that Li Zhiqiu had done before were deliberately dug up again. The eldest brother of the Li family is now like a grasshopper in autumn, and can hardly jump a few times.

Pei Lu had just sent a message when the man snatched her phone away.

She subconsciously reached out to grab it, but as soon as her hand stretched out, she suddenly looked at him and then looked at the bottom of the water.

Pei Lu asked: "Isn't this bathtub very small? Are you used to it?"

Si Ting listened to her, looked around, and did not refute.

It's a little small.

"Do you want to go to a bigger place?" He lay beside the bathtub, looking at Pei Lu curiously.

Pei Lu found it a little funny. Shouldn't she be the one asking this question?

There is a swimming pool in the backyard of the house, and she feels that Si Ting will be more comfortable there.

Thinking of this, she nodded and was about to give her suggestion.

Unexpectedly, before she could open her mouth, Si Ting stretched out his hands towards her.

Pei Lu knew that this meant she wanted to hug the fish, but she couldn't carry such a big fish to the swimming pool outside!

She reached out her hands worriedly and hugged him.

I thought this was a hug that would last for a moment, but after I was hugged tightly, the other party didn't let go.

Pei Lu felt her vision turned upside down, as if she was sucked into a whirlpool.

She wanted to open her eyes in shock, but the dizziness made her bury her head tightly in the other's arms.

She seemed to hear the sound of wind and rushing water.

" Open your eyes and look. "

Pei Lu's heart was already in her throat. Hearing this, she hesitated and opened her eyes. She felt as if she had turned into a drop of water. Everything magnified and slipped away in front of her eyes. She turned into a pool of water, rising into the air, and turned into countless water molecules. With a gust of wind, she fell into the river and slowly merged into the sea with the river water.

But she seemed not to have changed. She was still the same person who could stretch out her arms and hug the man next to her.

With a " plop " , the moment it fell into the sea, Pei Lu asked him in shock: " What kind of magic is this? "

" No, " the man replied calmly , " This is a little toy stolen from the system. "

Pei Lu: "..."

Pei Lu was shocked for a few seconds, her conscience ached a little, and then she looked at the boundless sea, excitedly and a little scared, she tightened her arms, and said happily: " Then ... take me to elope. "

## Chapter 43

Si Ting was amused by her words . He kissed Pei Lu's lips and breathed a sigh of relief for her.

Pei Lu hugged him and kissed him. Relying on the fact that she was being held firmly by the man , she sat on his powerful fish tail and let go of her hands to gesture: " You don't have that kind of thing ... Water-repellent beads? The very powerful kind , which can allow you to breathe underwater if you eat it. "

Si Ting pinched her nose and said, " You are a human being. You will die if you breathe underwater. "

Pei Lu: " You are a fake fairy!! "

So in order to avoid suffocating underwater , she held her boyfriend's face and gave him a big kiss.



But even though Si Ting was a fake goblin , he was still much stronger than the average person. Pei Lu felt that this long breath was more useful than carrying an oxygen tube with him.

She didn't know which sea they were in. This place was not like an ordinary seaside resort at all . The sea water was endless and blue to the point of being black . If she had a little fear of the deep sea , she would have sunk to the bottom with her eyes rolled back.

She held the strong and powerful mermaid and sank into the deep sea. Here, glowing jellyfish danced around her, sharks swam fiercely from behind her, colorful little fish blew bubbles around her , and there was a crab with a lame leg among the fiery red corals.

This is another world, a beautiful forgotten garden. She swims around here like a fish, feeling comfortable and at ease.

Floating to the surface , a naughty seabird took away the shells she picked up from the bottom of the sea. Si Ting took her forward through the waves, and finally simply hitched a ride on a whale.

Pei Lu saw a green island in the distance . Si Ting took her to the island . She sat on the soft sand . The mermaid lazily helped her gut the delicious deep-sea fish and roasted it over a fire. After eating this seafood dinner, she lazily lay on the beach to bask in the sun and had a long, comfortable sleep.

When night fell, she sat on a rock, feeling the sea breeze and gazing at the vast starry sky. Si Ting lay beside her hands, like a tamed and obedient beast.

Pei Lu looked at the flickering lights not far away and suddenly said to Si Ting: " Do you still remember Wang Kun? "

Si Ting was stunned.

Pei Lu sighed: " You don't remember, right? Even I am about to forget it. "

Although that experience happened not long ago, to her, it seemed like it happened a long time ago. She heard about Wang Kun's case from Li Yeqiu. He tried to sneak across the border for some unknown reason and was caught.

Li Yeqiu was also someone who had lived with them in Yong'an Town for a few days, so he felt familiar when he heard this name.

As for her biological parents, she hasn't asked about them for a long time. She feels that the current state of not disturbing each other is the best for them.

She lay on the reef and thought of the ruins of the ancient city she had just seen on the seabed. She had no impression of that place, and she thought it must be a forgotten place.

The once prosperous city can only lie quietly on the seabed now, becoming a place for fish to play. This is probably what is called great changes in the world.

The world is always changing, people are always changing, and even the starry sky above our heads is different every day.

But at this quiet moment, she hoped that she could always be with Si Ting.

" If I die before you, will you leave me as a widow? "

Pei Lu turned her head and looked eagerly at the mermaid who was stroking her long hair. She felt a little angry when she thought that after she left, the other party would give all his brutality and tenderness to another person.

She had thought about this question a long time ago, but Pei Lu always believed that nothing can last forever, and love will not last long.

She likes Si Ting. She liked him before and she likes him now, but she doesn't know if she will like him again in the future.

After all, look at those couples, they are all filled with happy and sweet smiles when they register and get their marriage certificates, but after one year, two years ... ten years, they will quarrel, have cold wars, and even divorce.

So she doesn't like to say things too decisively. She says she likes someone, but doesn't make any promises.

But now, she had to slap herself in the face. She really couldn't bear to do it. She wanted to have this person all to herself.

Under the moonlight, the man's eyes were filled with tenderness. He gently pinched the girl's cheek and said, " I can't remain a widow for you. "

Before Pei Lu could pout, she heard him say: " I will leave on the same day as you. "

Pei Lu was stunned.

Si Ting said: " I should have died a long time ago. I made a deal with the mastermind to get these decades of time. Their remaining meaning is you. "

Pei Lu's eyes were reflecting the stars and were full of shock. She felt as if she had taken a big bite of a sweet cream puff and her heart was filled with joy.

The man had never said he liked her, but she could sense the deep love in his eyes, smile, and even in his embrace. But now ...

She covered her heart and breathed deeply. She had never been the meaning of other people's lives. She felt that this sentence was heavier than " I love you " .

She immediately propped herself up with her arms and happily hugged Si Ting's neck.

There was also a smile in Si Ting's eyes.

The waves hitting the rocks sounded like a happy ode. In this starry sky and sea, Pei Lu suddenly moved closer to the other person's handsome face .

" Tell me, did you remember it and were just pretending to have lost your memory? "

Si Ting: "..."

Pei Lu couldn't get the answer to this question because she was pushed into the water by the unreasonable bad mermaid.

Next, they eloped to many places. The sea is a treasure trove that has not been fully developed.

The remains of ancient ships sank to the bottom of the sea, and the dusty gold coins reflected the dazzling light of the water. Many small islands that have never been visited by humans are also beautiful and make people linger.

During this comfortable and free time together, Pei Lu saw that Si Ting was different from his usual calm and restrained self, and now he was extremely aggressive in the water.

She felt that she understood the other person better than before.

But he never answered his own question – whether he was pretending to have amnesia.

" Do you remember anything? " Pei Lu touched his face, her eyes full of inquiry.

She felt that the other person seemed to have remembered something, but he seemed to be playing dumb with her again.

For example, she was very skeptical. In fact, the other party could walk on the shore, but in the past few days, he was like a fish that could only stay in the water.

What heightened her suspicion?

On a tropical island, she wanted to play by herself, so she ran into the woods. She didn't dare to run too far. When she came out, she saw the sauce that was only available in restaurants on the stone slab where the fish fillets were placed.

She asked where the thing came from, but the man actually learned to play deaf and dumb.

Pei Lu tried several times but failed. Even with threats and inducements, he refused to speak.

There is no other way but to go back and ask her slowly. She will expose her hypocrisy sooner or later.

The most important professional courses cannot be avoided no matter what, so this time, she has to go back no matter what.

Sure enough, when she proposed to go back, the handsome mermaid frowned, obviously unwilling.

Pei Lu raised her chin and stopped tolerating him: " You can't skip this class. Can you help me make up for the deducted credits? "

" I didn't even take my phone with me. Xiao Ke hasn't been able to contact me for so many days. I should be worried. "

Si Ting stared at her for a few seconds, as if he was considering the possibility of taking her away and hiding her in a big shell.

But in the end, he compromised. Even though he knew Pei Lu was pretending to be angry, he didn't want to see her frown.

Pei Lu returned home and slapped her head, feeling a little regretful.

The memories of these days are so wonderful that it's a pity that I can't record them with photos.

So she pointed at Si Ting and said, " Wait a moment, I'll be back soon. "

Si Ting grabbed her wrist and pushed her back into the water: " It's not time yet. "

Pei Lu didn't indulge him this time. After breaking free, she poked his face and said, " I have something else to do. Don't make trouble. I'm going to get angry. "

She didn't give the other party a chance to explain and turned and ran.

She rushed out of the bathroom and took out her notebook, intending to write down what she had gained in the past few days.

She had been secretly writing this notebook a long time ago. She planned to record the characteristics of mermaids and use it as a reference and inspiration for writing a novel in the future.

In her notes :

1. He is a must-have cheat for drawing cards, and he can easily rescue anyone from the sea. The Pei family needs a young master who is eager to flatter them.

2. He is very well behaved and obedient, but a little shy, so you need to spend more time with him.

3. He is very smart and loves to study.

...

Pei Lu read it line by line, and suddenly she felt happy because of something she was thinking about.

She picked up the notebook and started writing quickly –

Their children grow out of the warmest seabeds, so they don't need to get married or fall in love.

Before the last stroke was finished, a pair of arms suddenly stretched out from behind.

The arm was hung with the sleeve of a black bathrobe, with wet drops of water still on it.

The man who watched her write remained dignified and gentle, his black pupils gleaming with light and dark pools. He suppressed his desire to hide her on an uninhabited island, leaned close to her ear, and explained to her gently and patiently:

" We can also be in a relationship. I'm smart and love to study. "

Pei Lu's hand trembled and the pen fell to the ground.

QAQ .

leg .....

He ... he was really pretending!!

!!!

" Si Ting, I will bite you to death!!! "

:)

The author has something to say:

The story of Xiao Si and Lulu is coming to an end. I wonder if the rich ladies are interested in the quick-wear sweet cake. Here is an advertisement for the next fantasy novel, "The Heroine of the Bloody Novel is Bad [ Quick Wear ] ", which will be published around the middle of this month ~

#### Chapter 44 End of the text

Pei Lu twisted her neck with bared teeth and opened her mouth to bite people . The man knew he couldn't pretend anymore, so he could only smile and hug her tightly.

Pei Lu really grabbed him and took a bite, then she also hugged him and laughed.

" Really going to class? "

" Go ahead. "

Seeing that he was silent , Pei Lu pouted and said, " I am giving you a chance to show off , so you should cherish it. "

Si Ting looked at her.

Pei Lu pressed against his nose: " I want flowers. The flowers you gave me last time have withered . Can you give me another one? "

Si Ting really thought about it seriously.

Pei Lu just finished speaking when he suddenly slapped his head and said, " How about I invite my friends to my house for dinner and introduce you to everyone? And invite Li Yeqiu as well. "

She felt that she was doing very well now , and she wanted to show everyone her current life and formally introduce her boyfriend to everyone . Ye Ke had already asked her several times to treat him to a meal .

Si Ting thought about it and actually let go.

When Li Yequ arrived at the door with a cart full of flowers, he was almost frightened to the point of falling to the ground by the person who opened the door.

He pointed at Si Ting in shock and kept saying "you you you" for a long time. Looking at this face that was obviously much younger, he couldn't utter a complete sentence.

Si Ting looked at the truck full of flowers and calmly instructed the flower delivery man to put everything at the door.

"Let them come in and help." Li Yequ got up from the ground and said, "There are so many, the two of us can't move them all."

But Si Ting still let the driver leave.

Li Yequ beeped in dissatisfaction: "It's not like we don't have money to pay them for their hard work, is it that serious... And your house is too big, how can you clean it yourself? You should have hired someone a long time ago. If you want to treat us to a meal, I'll call you to contact a professional..."

"No."

"Why?"

"Do you know where this is?"

Li Yequ said as a matter of course: "The house."

Si Ting pushed the flowers into the gate, closed it, and said to Li Yequ: "This is the nest."

Li Yequ: "..."

??

Si Ting looked at Li Yequ meaningfully.

Li Yequ's neck shrank and he subconsciously wanted to run.

It was really strange. He was obviously extremely curious about Si Ting, but once he started telling him those bizarre and distant things, his legs went weak.

I always feel that the other party will kill him the next second after saying these things to him.

Then, something even more outrageous happened.

Li Yequ stared with his eyes wide open, watching the carpet on the stairs get wet. Puddles of water crawled down the stairs one step at a time. They forked at the last step, passed under his feet, and pulled away the flowers on the ground.

Li Yequ: "..."

The man's calm voice came from the side, but Li Yequ was already stunned at this time.

Si Ting said to him: "The nest is our most important private territory, and only our partner is allowed to approach. Strangers will bring a different smell, which is an invasion."

Li Yequ's neck shrank even tighter.

Si Ting looked at him strangely: "Don't be afraid, I'm not talking about this place."

Li Yequ: "..."

But this place has been designated as Si Ting's private territory, so he is unwilling to let strangers get close.

He has recovered his memory and has a partner. His almost instinctive desire for control is rising, so he decides to take back the room that Li Yequ has been occupying here and let him live somewhere else.

In the past, he had no right to interfere in this matter, but it would be different in the future. From now on, the upstairs would be their private territory.

Li Yejiu's legs were weak as he watched the forked streams of water that had wet the carpet, pulling up bunches of fresh and beautiful flower vines that were hanging on the marble pillars, statues, walls, and stair railings. He almost knelt down before Si Ting.

He held his heart weakly and asked the question he wanted to ask the most: " Brother ... I haven't felt well these past two days. Is there something wrong with me ..."

Si Ting glanced at him.

Li Yejiu survived by relying on the curse. Now the curse has been dismantled by the main brain and those system doors, and permanently sealed in the highest-level database. Li Yejiu will naturally be affected.

But Li Yejiu survived after all, and this will never change.

" You're fine, just stay up less late. "

Li Yejiu: "..."

Si Ting said: " You have serious dark circles under your eyes. "

Li Yejiu: "..."

When Nicholas arrived, the mansion had already looked like a small castle that could only appear in a fairy tale. The sunlight shone on the juicy flowers, filling the transparent house with vitality.

Nicholas came to ask Si Ting for advice. Si Ting has a pair of hands that turn stone into gold.

You can get rich by following him without blinking your eyes.

He didn't take the small investment company seriously at all. After catching the person, he gave him to the other party as a favor.

But today he was shocked to find that the small company on the verge of bankruptcy had made a great bet on the first project after the change of ownership. Si Ting was certainly not short of money, but the market value increased thirty times overnight, which was not something that could be achieved simply by having money.

But at this moment, the big boss behind the scenes, who should have been so successful in the social circle, disappeared for almost a month.

He really didn't know what to say, so he just came to invite him to make money together.

But the moment the door opened, Nicholas not only ignored the beautiful house with flowers, but even disdained making money.

He just stared blankly at his old friend whom he hadn't seen for less than a month, his eyes wide open: " Where did you get the Thermage done? "

Could it be that the magic pearls were used? ! !

Can boys use it too?!

Li Yejiu: "..."

Pei Lu was humming a cheerful tune when she walked into the classroom, which made Fang Yunzhu and his group look quite curious.

" You haven't come to class for a few days. I thought you were sick. Did you win the lottery? "

Pei Lu hummed: " That's about right, it's a good thing ... Do you have an appointment tonight? Come to my house for dinner. "

Fang Yunzhu's eyes lit up: " Yes. "

However, the remaining people in the dormitory were all busy with their own things. Some were on business trips, some were doing handovers, and after a long wait, the only ones free were Wu Jingjing and Fang Yunzhu, plus Ye Ke who rushed over, a total of four girls.

The four of them went to the supermarket and bought a lot of snacks.

Wu Jingjing was carrying the bag and chatting with everyone. She helped Pei Lu solve the problem of absenteeism for several days. Now it was Pei Lu's turn to repay her. She was going back to her hometown for a few days to attend her cousin's wedding.

" Your cousin just graduated this year, why is she in such a hurry to get married? " Fang Yunzhu was shocked.

Because Wu Jingjing had a very good relationship with her cousin, they often talked on the phone in the dormitory. During her freshman year, she even came here to visit her and lived in the dormitory at the time, so everyone knew her cousin when she was mentioned.

Wu Jingjing shrugged : " She's pregnant and can't wait. Anyway, they've been dating for seven years and the two families are so familiar with each other, so they decided to get married. "

Their child was not a surprise, because the two had long intended to get married after graduation. My brother-in-law had a stable job, and my cousin had passed the civil service exam half a year ago. This child would not disrupt their plans.

So when they said they wanted to get married, everyone who knew them thought it was a reasonable thing to do.

Fang Yunzhu's pupils trembled: " Dating for seven years? "

Wu Jingjing smiled evilly: " Yes, we started dating in high school, and we even had to ask our parents out because we were caught having a premature relationship. "

Ye Ke held his face in his hands, " It's good to fall in love early. When I was in high school, I hated bad boys the most. Now that I think about it, I really regret it. "

Pei Lu: "..."

Pei Lu's focus was obviously different. She got goose bumps when she thought about having a baby in her big belly.

She was similar to Ye Ke when she was in high school and thought she would be a widow for the rest of her life.

A few people chatted about love, marriage, graduation and work all the way and finally went home.

Among these men and women, Li Yeqiu and Nicholas Bisting are eloquent, Ye Ke and Fang Yunzhu are more powerful than Pei Lushe, and there is also the outspoken Wu Jingjing. After they set up the barbecue grill in the backyard and poured drinks, the two hosts had nothing to do.

Amidst the laughter, Pei Lu held the grilled fish given by Si Ting and whispered in his ear: " Are you the Conch Girl? I was gone for a long time, and you made the house so beautiful. "

Bought her so many flowers!!

This is so much more than a bouquet of flowers!!

Si Ting wiped the sauce off the corner of her lips with a tissue, and his heart burned at the sight of her shining, loving gaze.

Before he could answer, Pei Lu moved closer to him and said, " Will you give me everything I want? I have something special I want. "

Si Ting raised his eyebrows, seeing her eyes twinkling and gurgling, and said, " Not necessarily. "

Pei Lu: "..."

She said unsatisfiedly: " Shouldn't we all say ' yes at this time ' ? "

She smiled secretly and whispered: " We talked all the way back today, all kinds of things. Ye Ke said she wouldn't consider getting married before she was 30, but she said if we had a child, she could be the child's godmother. "

Si Ting's reaction to the topic of " children " was very general. In their tribe, reproduction was not a blame. But if Pei Lu liked ...

" But I can't imagine what it would be like to have something in my stomach. I think it's pretty scary. "

Pei Lu frowned, finally the groundwork was laid.

She looked up and chuckled: " So, can you lay an egg? "

Si Ting: "..."

Pei Lu said seriously: " I'm not putting pressure on you right now. I'm just giving you a heads up so you can be mentally prepared and think of a solution. "

Si Ting: "..."

Pei Lu put down the barbecue plate and clasped her hands together: " It doesn't necessarily have to be your next life. I know you can't be born again. Can we go to your hometown and steal one? "

Si Ting: "..."

Pei Lu urged him: " Go to the system and get a useful little toy. "

She really wanted to see if her boyfriend was a cute little fish when he just hatched from his shell!!!

Since this regret can never be made up, it is not unacceptable to try to save the situation by taking a look at other fish.

Si Ting's fingertips curled the end of her hair, lowered his head to look at her ring finger, and slowly smiled: " You want an egg? "

Pei Lu nodded.

Si Ting's smile became more and more obvious.

Suddenly, Pei Lu's fingers felt cold.

She looked down and saw that the other person had put a ring on her finger. An irregular black stone piece as big as a little fingernail was inlaid horizontally on the platinum ring, emitting a faint luster, quiet and simple.

" What is this? " She touched her fingers in surprise. Before she could be shocked that a man would give her a ring, she already felt a sour and sweet throbbing from the ring.

Before Si Ting could answer, the men and women who were chatting enthusiastically over there finally noticed that two people were missing.



Everyone shouted to them in a noisy voice: " That couple over there, stop doing anything behind the organization's back, and come over here and have fun with the people! "

Dusk had already fallen, with only the light from a string of small lamps illuminating the lively back garden.

Seeing that the two men were still sitting there motionless, Li Yeqiu and Ye Ke simply rolled up their sleeves and came over to pull them away.

Amidst the noise, the man smiled and said to her: " When in Rome, do as the Romans do.

According to the rules here, singles cannot register an egg. "

Pei Lu: "..."

Pei Lu's ears turned red. She touched the ring and for some reason, she just liked it so much.

Seeing the two people pulling them closer and closer, she quickly grabbed them and asked, " What is this? "

" My reverse scale. "

It was when he peeled off the curse, the last scale on his bloody heart that shouldn't have grown there.

Those few scattered scales were countless times more fragile than the hard scales on the fish's tail, but pulling them out was dozens of times more painful than usual.

So he kept one.

Because he felt that it was the person in front of him who gave him the chance and courage to be reborn, which was more unforgettable than any deep curse.

From then on, he was free, but he had a new reverse scale that he needed to protect for his entire life.

" We caught them, they were whispering! "

" That's too unkind. Tell us something good to share! "

" Make them drink alcohol!!!! "

Pei Lu was pushed towards the hot grill, still holding Si Ting's hand tightly.

Her heart was hotter than the charcoal on the grill. The ring had already been stained with her temperature. She could not hear what anyone said. Only the last words the man said echoed in her mind over and over again.

Ye Ke's hands were suddenly free. The little sister who she had been holding tightly just now broke free from her somehow and rushed directly into the arms of the tall man next to her, and kissed him on the corner of his mouth with a smile.

Ye Ke had drunk some wine, and her mind was light and she couldn't focus at all. But even when she was drunk, she still criticized their behavior seriously: " Pei Lu, get down here. You are going to anger everyone by showing off your affection in front of so many people! "

Li Yeqiu was also drunk, and he put his arm around Ye Ke's shoulder and said, " It's okay, Xiaoye, I'll take you out tomorrow and we'll find a better place. "

Pei Lu hugged her boyfriend's neck unconvincedly and leaned on his shoulder with a whimper.

" No matter where you look, none of them are as good as mine. "

Ye Ke beeped loudly in dissatisfaction, and Nicholas waved at them impatiently: " Come here quickly, the meat is burnt!! "

" ... "

Amid the noise, Pei Lu listened to her friends' laughter, tightened her arms, and pressed her face against Si Ting. Her smiling eyes were filled with bright and happy starlight.

...

For more exciting and good books, please visit Qishu.com <http://www.qishu.me>